Dorrington (S.) pseud. 1803

THE

HERMIT:

Or, The Unparallel'd

SUFFERINGS

And Surprising

ADVENTURES

OF

Mr. *PHILIP QUARLL*,

An ENGLISHMAN:

Who was lately discovered by Mr. DORRINGTON, a *Bristol* Merchant, upon an uninhabited Island in the SOUTH-SEA; where he has lived above FIFTY YEARS, without any Human Assistance; still continues to reside, and will not come away.

CONTAINING,

I. His Conferences with those who found him out; to whom he recites the most material Circumstances of his Life; as, that he was born in the Parish of *St. Giles*, educated by the charitable Contribution of a Lady, and put 'Prentice to a Locksmith.

II. How he left his Master, and was taken up with a notorious House-breaker, who was hanged; how, after his Escape, he went to Sea a Cabin-Boy, married a famous Whore, listed himself a common Soldier, turned Singing-master, and married three Wives, for which he was tried and condemned at the *Old Baily*.

III. How he was pardoned by King CHARLES II. turned Merchant, and was shipwrecked on this desolate Island on the Coast of *Mexico*.

THE TWELFTH EDITION.

LONDON:

Printed for J. WREN, opposite *New Exchange Buildings* in the *Strand*; S. CROWDER, H. WOODGATE, J. FULLER, and J. WARCUS. 1780.

BRITISH MUSEUM

THE

PREFACE.

TRUTH and Fiction have, of late, been ſo promiſcuouſly blended together, in performances of this nature; that, in the preſent caſe, it ſeems abſolutely neceſſary to diſtinguiſh the one from the other. If Robinſon Cruſoe, Moll Flanders, and Colonel Jack, have had their admirers among the lower rank of readers; it is as certain, that the morality in maſquerade, which may be diſcovered in the travels of Lemuel Gulliver, has been an equal entertainment to the ſuperior claſs of mankind.

Now it may, without the leaſt arrogance, be affirmed, that though this ſurprizing narrative be not ſo replete with vulgar ſtories as the former, or ſo interſperſed with a ſatirical vein, as the laſt of the above-mentioned treatiſes; yet it is certainly of more uſe to the publick, than either of them, becauſe every incident herein related is real matter of fact. But becauſe my ſhare in this work is no other than that of a bare editor; I think it my duty to account for the poſſeſſion of this manuſcript.

It was put into my hands, about a year ago, by Mr. Dorrington, an eminent merchant, with full liberty to publiſh it when, and in what manner, I thought moſt proper. I hope therefore it will not be deemed impertinent to give ſome account of my friend, as a reputation to the work itſelf.

"Mr. Edward Dorrington is deſcended
"from a very ancient and honourable family
"in Staffordſhire. His grandfather, Mr. Jo-
"ſeph Dorrington, removed out of that coun-
"ty, to Frome in Somerſetſhire; his employ
"was that of a very conſiderable grazier: The
"iſſue he left at his deceaſe was one ſon, Ri-
"chard (the father of my friend), and two
"daughters. Mr. Richard Dorrington for

"ſome

" ſome time, was a ſtudent of Gray's Inn;
" but, liking a country-life beſt, he having
" thoroughly qualified himſelf, retired to
" Frome, the above-mentioned reſidence of
" his father; where he married Mrs. Marga-
" ret Groves, of Taunton, a gentlewoman of
" about a thouſand pounds fortune. Soon
" after his marriage, he went and ſettled at
" Bath, where the integrity of his fair prac-
" tice ſoon rendered him eminent in his pro-
" feſſion. He acquired a very competent e-
" ſtate, and died in the year 1708, having no
" other iſſue than his only ſon, the preſent
" Mr. Edward Dorrington, whom he had
" put to be bred a merchant, under the care
" of Mr. Stephen Graham of Briſtol. His
" diligence, and courteous behaviour, dur-
" ing his ſervitude, ſo highly recommended
" him to his maſter's eſteem, that, when his
" time was expired, he admitted him into a
" moiety of his commerce, married him to
" his daughter, and gave her an handſome
" portion ſuitable to his merit.

" The happineſs of my acquaintance with
" him began in his apprenticeſhip; and has,
" with the greateſt ſatisfaction to me, conti-
" nued ever ſince."

As to the genuineneſs of this treatiſe, I am

farther to assure the reader, that as Mr. Dorrington is allowed, by all who know him, to be a gentleman of unquestionable veracity, and above attempting an imposition upon the publick; so the first book herein was wholly written by himself, and the second and third books were faithfully transcribed from Mr. Quarll's parchment-roll, which was a continuation of what my friend had begun.

When Mr. Dorrington undertook this voyage, he set sail, as is well known, from Bristol to the South-Sea; and traded all along that coast to Mexico, now called New-Spain.

And he is now making a second voyage to the same places.

To proceed to the work itself: The first book contains a relation of Mr. Dorrington's discovery of Mr. Quarll, his several conferences with him, a description of the island, and the manner of our Hermit's living there; with many other curious particulars.

The second and third books are the contents of the Hermit's parchment-roll abovementioned, and contain the most surprizing, as well as various turns of fortune ever yet recounted in any work of this kind. And, although

although the continued ſeries of misfortunes which attended him ſeemed to render his life an example of the moſt unhappy ſtate of human nature; yet we do not find ſo great an enormity in his actions, that vengeance ſhould purſue him ſo cloſely by unparalleled croſſes. If polygamy could call down ſuch divine reſentments, we muſt be ſilent; nor farther urge his fate.

However, for this fact he was brought to juſtice by the laws of his country; and he accounts for the inducements of his committing that ſin, at his trial. This reflection therefore ſhould be wiped off, ſince he is now become the humbleſt of penitents.

The obſervations throughout theſe ſheets will be found to be modeſt, ſerious, and inſtructive, and all centre in the unerring moral, that,

Whate'er we do, or whereſoe'er we're driv'n,
Still, we muſt own, ſuch is the will of heav'n.

To conclude: In the publication of theſe papers, I have diſcharged two promiſes; the one

one made by Mr. Dorrington to the Hermit, and the other made by myself to Mr. Dorrington: And that they meet with a reception, as candid as they are useful, is the hearty wish of

The Reader's Humble Servant.

P. L.

ON

ON THE

HERMIT's

SOLITUDE.

BEHOLD a man in his firſt claſs of years,
When youthleſs ſports made way for growing cares,
The chequer'd fortunes of a manly age,
Buſies reflecting ſenſe with thoughts more ſage:
Various affairs will cauſe a world of woes:
Then in the fall of life how ſweet's repoſe!
The calm, he now enjoys, makes full amends
For all he felt; heav'n never ill intends;
Suff'rings are ſent to us from God above,
To make us practiſe faith, and ſacred love;
Aw'd into patience, by freſh ſcenes of fate,
We live too ſoon, and learn to live too late.

In

In buſy worlds, and trading peopled towns,
More faſt we ſin, than ſin itſelf abounds.
In ſoft repoſe, Quarll empires does diſdain;
Free from diſquiet, ſolitude's his gain.
Thoughts more ſublime, a haven more ſerene,
Nought e'er to vex him that may cauſe the ſpleen.
Methinks I with him ſhare of Eden's grove,
And wiſh no better Paradiſe to rove:
Here's not ambition with her gaudy train,
Nor envy trampling down the poor or mean;
Nor avarice nor haughty pride invade,
Nor can remorſe his ſlumb'ring nights upbraid;
In peace he reſts, unenvy'd or unknown,
And pities monarchs on their toilſome throne.
No king that reigns, but muſt as mortals die;
And when they rule, no ſubject ſhould aſk, why?
Heav'n grants them licence; and, when God gives laws,
Where's the bold man that dares diſpute the cauſe?
Would the great men from one ſo mean be told,
They ſerve a crown for int'reſt and for gold?
'Tis with content Quarll lives; he's truly bleſs'd,
Has nought to dread, nor is with aught diſtreſs'd;
Prays for his country, and its preſent prince,
That he may reign in heav'n, when call'd from hence,
Here, in theſe lonely ſhades, he juſt uproſe,
A type of reſurrection to diſcloſe;
A reſurrection from a watry hell,
Where ſhoals of terrors ſtrove which ſhould excell;
A reſurrection, emblem of the laſt,
Which will recal our ev'ry guilt that's paſt:

Drawing

Drawing a glare of conſcience to our view,
Of horror for our ſins, both old and new:
But ſo unſpotted in his preſent ſtate,
I'd wiſh myſelf as happy; not more great:
I'd know no change, but, when God calls, obey,
Prepar'd in my account for judgment-day:
Then happy riſe from cares, and worldly toys,
To more ſubſtantial and eternal joys.
This honeſt Hermit, at a tranſient view,
Seems to be born all precedent t' out-do.
Something uncommon makes him wond'rous ſeem:
Sound are his morals, drawn from ev'ry theme.
Thus from our Engliſh Hermit learn to know,
That early piety oppoſes woe.
Thro' ev'ry ſtage of life ſee Philip toſt,
And on a deſart ſhore by tempeſt caſt,
Where he's moſt happy, when imagin'd loſt:
So true it is, the Gods our good deſign,
As lab'ring ſlaves dig diamonds from a mine.
From rugged rocks the ſailors gain a prize,
And, ſhipwreck'd oft, from death to life ariſe;
So may we at the laſt dread trumpet's ſound,
By true repentance here on earth, be found,
Acceptable in heaven, where joys abound!
In grateful hymns hail in the new ſpring-day,
And, like the angels, never ceaſe to pray:
A kingdom Quarll doth undiſturb'd enjoy;
He's rais'd a monarch, from an abject boy.
And here I can't omit the pencil'd plan,
Of Beauſidelle his monkey, and his man.
The docile beaſt moſt ſervilely obeys,
And juſtly merits more than human praiſe;

A beauty of his kind, good-natur'd too,
A brute ſo pleaſing, wonderful and new,
Subſervient to his lord, loving and juſt:
Where's human ſervant we can thus intruſt?

THE

THE ENGLISH HERMIT.

BOOK I.

An ACCOUNT *how Mr.* QUARLL *was found out; with a deſcription of his dreſs, habitation, and utenſils; as alſo his converſation with the perſons who firſt diſcovered him.*

HAVING concluded thoſe mercantile affairs which I undertook, by this voyage, to negociate; and being upon my return for England, and wind bound; during my ſtay I daily walked about the ſea-ſhore. Very early one morning, the weather being extreme fair, and the ſea wonderful calm, as I was taking my uſual turn, I accidentally fell into diſcourſe with a Spaniſh Mexican inhabitant, named Alvarado: And, as we were viewing the rocks which abound in thoſe ſeas, he deſired me to take notice of a vaſt

long one about ſeven leagues from ſhore, which he ſaid was ſuppoſed to incloſe ſome land, by its great extent; but the acceſs to it was very dangerous, by reaſon of the rocks, which reach ſo far under water, being in ſome places too ſhallow for boats, and in others too deep to ford over; and the ſea commonly very rough in that place, hitherto prevented farther reſearch, ſuppoſing the advantage which might accrue from the land, would not countervail the coſt and trouble of making it inhabitable; for that he and ſome friends had on a fine day, as it now was, the curioſity to go as near as they could with ſafety, which was about fifty yards from the main rock, but were forced to return as unſatisfied as they went; only, that he had the pleaſure of catching ſome delicious fiſh, which lay playing upon the ſurface of the water, having a rod in his hand, and lines in his pocket, being ſeldom without, when he walks on the ſea-ſhore: Theſe fiſh are ſomewhat larger than an herring in its prime, ſkinned like a mackerel, made as a gudgeon, and of divers beautiful colours; eſpecially if caught in a fair day; having ſince obſerved, that they are more or leſs beautiful, according to the ſerenity of the weather.

The account he gave me of them excited my curioſity to go and catch ſome; and he being as uſual, provided with tackle, we picked up a parcel of yellow maggots, which breed in dead tortoiſes upon the rock, at which thoſe fiſhes bite very eagerly.

Thus equipped with all neceſſaries for the ſport, we agreed with a young fellow, one of the long-boat's crew, belonging to the ſhip I was come over in; whoſe maſter being juſt come on ſhore, and not expected to return ſpeedily, he readily con-

conſented to row us thither for about the value of a ſhilling.

Being come to the place, we found extraordinary ſport: the fiſhes were ſo eager, that our lines were no ſooner in but we had a bite.

Whilſt we were fiſhing, the young man that rowed us thither, 'ſpying a cliſt in the rock, thro'which he ſaw a light, had a mind to ſee what was at the other ſide; ſo put off his cloaths in order to wade to it: Thus, having taken the hitcher of the boat, he gropes along for ſure footing, the rock being very full of holes.

Being come to the cleſt, he creeps through, and in a ſhort time returns, calling to us with precipitation, which expreſſed both joy and ſurpriſe: Gentlemen! gentlemen! ſaid he, I have made a diſcovery of a new land, and the fineſt that the ſun ever ſhone on: Leave off your fiſhing; you'll find here much better buſineſs. Having by that time caught a pretty handſome diſh of fiſh, we put up our tackling, faſtened our boat to the rock, and ſo we went to ſee this new-found land.

Being come at the other ſide of the rock, we ſaw, as he ſaid, a moſt delightful country, but deſpaired going to it, there being a lake about a mile long at the bottom of the rock, which parted it from the land; for neither Alvarado nor myſelf could ſwim; but the young fellow, who could, having leaped into the water, finding it all the way but breaſt-high, we went in alſo, and waded to the other ſide, which aſcended gently, about five or ſix feet from the lake, to a moſt pleaſant land, flat and level, covered with a curious graſs, ſomething like chamomile, but of no ſmell, and of an agreeable taſte: It bore alſo abundance of fine lofty trees, of different kinds and

make, which in ſeveral places ſtood in cluſters, compoſing groves of different height and largeneſs. Being come to a place where the trees ſtood in ſuch a diſpoſition as gave our ſight a greater ſcope, we ſaw, at ſome diſtance, a moſt delightful wood of conſiderable extent. The agreeableneſs of the perſpective made by nature, both for the creating pleaſure, and condolence of grief, prompted my curioſity to a view of the delights which the diſtance we were at might in ſome meaſure, rob us of: But Alvarado, who, till then, had diſcerned nothing whereby we could judge the iſland to be inhabited, was fearful, and would not venture farther that way, leaſt we ſhould of a ſudden be ſallied upon by wild beaſts out of the wood; and, as I could not diſcommend his precaution, the thickneſs of it giving room to believe there might be dangerous creatures in it; ſo we went ſouthward, finding numbers of fine trees, and here and there ſmall groves, which we judged to be compoſed of forty or fifty ſeveral trees: but, upon examination, we found it, to our great amazement, to proceed of only one plant; whoſe outmoſt lower branches, bending to the ground, about ſeven or eight feet from the middle ſtem, ſtruck root, and became plants, which did the ſame; and in that manner covered a conſiderable ſpot of ground; ſtill growing leſs, as they ſtood fartheſt from the old body.

Having walked ſome time under that moſt ſurprizing and wonderful plant, admiring the greatneſs of nature's works, we went on, finding ſeveral of the ſame in our way, wherein harboured monkeys; but their ſwift flight prevented our diſcerning their colours: Yet, going on, we found they were two kinds; one having green backs, yellow faces and bellies; the other grey, with white bellies and faces: but both ſorts exceeding beautiful.

At

At ſome diſtance we perceived three things ſtanding together, which I took to be houſes: I believe, ſaid I, this iſland is inhabited; for, if I miſtake not, yonder are dwelling-places. So they are, ſaid Alvarado; and therefore I don't think it wiſdom to venture any farther, leaſt they ſhould be ſavages and do us hurt; ſo would have gone back: but I was reſolved to ſee what they were, and perſuaded him to go on; ſaying, it would be time enough for us to retreat when we perceived danger. That may be too late, ſaid he: For as evil doth not always ſucceed danger, danger doth not always precede evil; we may be ſurpriſed. Well, well, ſaid I, if any people ſhould come upon us, we muſt ſee them at ſome diſtance; and if we can't avoid them, here are three of us, a good long ſtaff with an iron point at one end, and an hook at the other; I ſhall exerciſe that, and keep them off, at leaſt till you get away: Come along, and fear not. So I pulled him along.

Being come near enough to diſcern better, we found, that what we took for houſes were rather arbours, being apparently made of green trees: Then, indeed, I began to fancy ſome wild people inhabited them, and doubted whether it were ſafe to go nearer; but concealed my doubt, leaſt I ſhould intimidate Alvarado ſo that he ſhould run away, to which he was very much inclined. I only ſlackened my pace, which Alvarado perceiving, imagined that I ſaw ſome evil coming, which he thought unavoidable; and not daring to go from his company, he only condoled his misfortune; ſaying, he dearly repented taking my advice: That he feared we ſhould pay dearly for our ſilly curioſity; for indeed thoſe things were more like thieves dens, or wild peoples huts, than chriſtians habitations.

By this time we were come near a ſpot of ground,

pretty clear of trees, on which ſome animals were feeding, which I took to be goats; but Alvarado fancied them to be deers, by their ſwift flight at our appearing: However, I inferred by their ſhyneſs, that we were out of the way in our judgment concerning the arbours: For, ſaid I, if theſe were inhabited, thoſe creatures would not have been ſo ſcared at the ſight of men; And, if by nature wild, they would not graze ſo near men's habitations, had there been any body in them. I rather believe ſome Hermit has formerly lived there, and is either dead or gone. Alvarado, who to that time had neither heard nor ſeen any thing that could contradict what I ſaid, began to acquieſce to it, and goes on.

Being come within reach of plain diſcernment, we were ſurprized: If theſe, ſaid I, be the works of ſavages, they far exceed our expert artiſts. Their regularity appeared unconfined to the rules of art, and complete architecture without the craft of the the artiſt; nature and time only being capable of bringing them to that perfection. They were neither houſes, huts, nor arbours; yet had all the uſefulneſs and agreements of each.

Having ſufficiently admired the uncommon beauty of the outſide without interruption, but rather diverted with the moſt agreeable harmony of various ſinging-birds, as perched on a green hedge, which ſurrounded about one acre of land near the place, we had the curioſity to ſee the inſide; and, being neareſt the middlemoſt, we examined that firſt. It was about nine feet high, and as much ſquare; the walls were ſtrait and ſmooth, covered with green leaves, ſomething like thoſe of a mulberry tree, lying as cloſe and regular as ſlates on a ſlated houſe: the top went up rounding like a cupola, and covered in the

the ſame manner as the ſides: from each corner, iſſued a ſtrait ſtem, about twelve feet higher, bare of branches to the top, which were very full of leaves, and ſpread over, making a moſt pleaſant canopy to the manſion beneath.

Being full of admiration at the wonderful ſtructure and nature of the place, we came to a door which was made of green twigs, neatly woven, and faſtened with a ſmall ſtick, through a loop made of the ſame.

The door being faſtened without, gave us encouragement to venture in; it being evident, that the hoſt was abſent: ſo we opened it, and the firſt thing we ſaw, being oppoſite to the door, was, a bed lying on the ground, which was an hard dry hearth, very ſmooth and clean; we had the curioſity to examine what it was made of, and found it another ſubject of admiration. The covering was a mat about three inches thick, made of a ſort of graſs, which, though as dry as the oldeſt hay, was as green as a leek, felt as ſoft as cotten, and was as warm as wool: the bed was made of the ſame, and in the ſame manner, but three times as thick; which made it as eaſy as a down bed: under that lay another, but ſomewhat harder.

At one ſide of the room ſtood a table made of two pieces of thin oak board, about three feet long, faſtened upon four ſticks driven into the ground, and by it a chair made of green twigs, as the door; at the other ſide of the room lay a cheſt on the ground, like a ſailor's ſmall cheſt; over it, againſt the wall, hung a linen jacket and breeches, ſuch as ſeamen wear on board; on another pin hung a large coat, or gown, made of the ſame ſort of graſs, and after the ſame manner, as the bed's covering, but not above half an inch thick; and a cap by it of the ſame: theſe we ſuppoſed to be a winter-garb for ſomebody.

Having viewed the furniture of the dwelling place, we examined its fabric, which we could not find out by the outside, it being so closely covered with leaves; but the inside being bare, we found it to be several trees, whose bodies met close, and made a solid wall, which by the breadth of every stem, we judged to be about six inches thick: their bark being very smooth, and of a pleasant olive colour, made a mighty agreeable wainscotting; the roof, which was hung very thick with leaves, was branches, which reached from end to end, and were crossed over by the side ones that were woven between, which made a very even and smooth cieling, so thick of leaves and branches, that no rain could penetrate. My companion's uneasiness, expecting the host's return every moment, hindered my examining every thing more narrowly; and, having slightly looked into the chest, which lay open, wherein we saw nothing but sheets of parchment, which his haste would not permit me to look into, we went away.

Going out, we saw at one corner of the room, behind the door a couple of firelocks, the sight of which much alarmed my company, and, I must confess, startled me; for, till then, I was inclinable to believe some hermit dwelt in the place: but finding arms in the room of a crucifix, and religious pictures, which were the common ornaments of those religious men, made me waver in my opinion: and, having taken the pieces in my hands, which, for rust, appeared not to have been fit for use for many years, renewed my former opinion; supposing them to be the effects of some shipwreck, which the hermit found upon the rocks. But my company, persisting in their own, hasten'd out, and would have gone quite away, without seeing any more, had

I not, by many arguments, made them ſenſible, that if thoſe arms had been intended for the evil uſe Alvarado imagined, they would have been kept in better order; to which being obliged to acquieſce, he conſented to go and examine the other, it being as worthy of admiration as that we had ſeen, though quite of another nature, but much of the ſame height and make.

The next we came at was cover'd all over with the ſame ſort of graſs as grew on the ground, which lay as even, as though it had been mowed and rolled: behind it were ſeveral lodges, made, as it were, for ſome dogs; but we neither ſaw nor heard any.

Having viewed the place all round, we poſted the young fellow with us at the outſide, to give notice when any body appeared, leſt we ſhould be ſurprized whilſt we ſaw the inſide; ſo, having opened the door, which was made and faſtened after the manner of the firſt, we went in, expecting to find another dwelling place, but it proved rather a kitchen; there being no bed, but only a parcel of ſhells, of different ſizes, which we ſuppoſed to be applyed for utenſils, ſome being ſcorched at the outſide as having been on the fire. but exceeding clean within: the reſt were, both inſide and outſide, as fine as nakes of pearl.

At one end of the room was a hole cut in the ground like ſtew-ſtoves, in great kitchens; about three or four feet from that there was another fire-place, made of three ſtones, fit to roaſt at; in both which places appeared to have been fire lately, by wood coals, and aſhes freſh made. This confirmed my opinion, that it was an hermitage. Alvarado, who all along feared we ſhould meet with men who would miſuſe us, was not a little pleaſed to find

places in room of beds, and kitchen utenſils inſtead of weapons. I hope, ſaid he, we are not in ſo great danger as I feared; here cannot be many men, unleſs they croud together in yonder place; and, if ſo, they would have been here before now, had they been in the way. His fears being in a great meaſure diſperſed, we looked about more leiſurely; and, ſeeing ſeveral ſhells, that were covered, on a ſhelf that lay croſs two ſticks that were ſtuck in the wall, which was made of turf, we had the curioſity to ſee what was in them; and found, in one, pickled anchovies: in others muſhrooms, capers, and other ſorts of pickles. Let them, ſaid I, be who they will that dwell here, I am ſure they know good eating; and therefore, probably may be no ſtrangers to good manners. Upon another ſhelf, behind the door, lay divers ſorts of dryed fiſhes; and upon the ground ſtood, uncovered, two cheſts with fiſh and fleſh in ſalt.

Theſe proviſions being ſomewhat too voluptuous for an hermit, gave us room for ſpeculation. I have lived (ſaid Alvarado) at Mexico theſe ſix years, and have been at Peru above twenty times, and yet never heard talk of this iſland: the acceſs to it is ſo difficult, and dangerous, that, I dare ſay we are the firſt that have been on theſe ſides of the rocks. I am very apt to believe, that a company of determined Buccaniers, which are ſaid to frequent theſe ſeas, ſhelter here; and that the habitation we have ſeen, and this place, belong to their captain; and that the company reſorts in caves up and down theſe rocks. Really I could not well gainſay it, being too probable; yet I would not altogether acquieſce to his opinion, leſt he ſhould thereby take a motive to go away before we had ſeen the other place. I muſt confeſs, ſaid I, here's

here's room for conjectures, but no proof of certainty: however, let it be as you ſay, 'tis a plain caſe here are none to diſturb us; therefore, whilſt we have liberty, let us ſee the other place: ſo we faſtened the door as we found it, and went to the next, which was ſhut after the ſame manner as the two preceding, but made of quite different ſtuff; being a compleat arbour, compoſed of trees, planted within a foot of one another, whoſe branches were woven together in ſuch a regular manner, that they made ſeveral agreeable compartments, and ſo cloſe, that nothing but air could enter: it was of the ſame height and bigneſs with the kitchen; which ſtood at the other end of the dwelling-place, which made a very uniform wing to it.

The coolneſs of the arbour removed our doubts of its being another dwelling, unleſs only uſed in hot weather.

Having ſufficiently viewed the outſide, we went in, and found ſeveral boards, like dreſſers or tables in a pantry, on which lay divers broad and deep ſhells, as beautiful as thoſe in the kitchen; in ſome of which was butter, in others cream and milk. On a ſhelf lay ſeveral ſmall cheeſes, and on another a parcel of roots like Jeruſalem artichokes, which ſeemed to have been roaſted. All this did but confirm the opinion we were in, that it was no hermitage; there being ſufficient to gratify the appetite, as well as to ſupport nature. Therefore, not knowing what to think of the maſter of the houſe, we made no long ſtay, but conculded to haſte, and get our fiſh dreſſed, it being near dinner-time; and as the trees ſtood very thick inland, and might conceal men from our ſight till we came too near to ſhun 'em; we thought it proper to walk on the outſide, near the rocks, that we might ſee at ſome diſtance before us.

Walking along, a phlegm ſticking in my throat, I happened to hawk pretty loud; the noiſe was anſwered from I believe twenty places of the rock, and in as many different ſounds; which alarmed Alvarado, who took it to be a ſignal from men concealed up and down the rock, not conſidering the difficulty of their coming at us; there being a lake at the foot of it, which they muſt have been obliged to wade over, and which would have given us time to get away: but fear, which often blinds reaſon, repreſented the evil infallible to his thought, which was morally impoſſible. I did all I could to make him ſenſible they were but ecchoes; and, to convince him thereof, I gave a loud hem, which was anſwered in like manner; but by being a ſecond time repeated, and by a louder voice, I was certain the laſt did not proceed from me; which put me in apprehenſion that ſomebody, beſides myſelf, had hemm'd alſo. My companion, whoſe countenance, being turned as pale as death, expreſſed the exceſs of his fears, would have run away, had not the voice come from the very way we were to go. Now, ſaid he, (hardly able to utter his words for trembling) you are, I hope, convinced that it would have been ſafer for us to retire, inſtead of gratifying your unreaſonable curioſity: what do you think will become of us? the young fellow, at theſe words, falls a weeping, ſaying, he wiſhed he had miſſed the getting of that money, which was like to be dearly earned. I muſt confeſs, I began to be a little apprehenſive of danger, and wiſhed myſelf ſafe away, but concealed my thoughts; heartening them as well as I could: and, repreſenting the danger equal, either moving forwards, or ſtanding ſtill, I at laſt perſuaded them to go on.

We were ſcarce gone forty paces farther, before we perceived, at a conſiderable diſtance, ſomething like

a

a man, with another creature, but preſently loſt them among the trees, before we could have a full view of them; which made every one of us conceive a different idea of what we had ſeen. Alvarado would have it be a giant, and a man of common ſize with him, and both armed cap-à-poe. The poor lad, who was already as bad as a ſlave, being bound to a ſevere, ill natured maſter, feared death more than bondage; ſo took what he had ſeen for ſome ſhe-bear, and one of her whelps with her, to make her yet more dreadful; and, by all means, would have thrown himſelf into the lake, in order to get at the other ſide of the rock: thus the danger appeared to each of them to be what they dreaded moſt; but I was ſomewhat better compoſed in mind than they. I gave the object I ſaw the likelieſt reſemblance the time it was in ſight would permit, which I could adapt to nothing but a man of common ſize, and ſomewhat like a dog with him; ſo perſiſting in my opinion, made them waver in theirs: thus we went on ſomething better compoſed.

Being gone about an hundred yards farther, we ſaw the ſame again, but nearer hand, and without interruption, the place being pretty clear of trees: thus having a full view, we were all, to our great ſatisfaction, convinced, that what had been taken for a formidable giant, and a terrible ſhe-bear, was but an ordinary man; but that which was with him running up a tree as ſoon as he perceived us, prevented our diſcerning what animal it was: but the man, who walked on apace, ſoon came within the reach of a more certain diſcernment, and appeared to be a venerable old man, with a worſhipful white beard, which covered his naked breaſt and a long head of hair, of the ſame colour; which, ſpreading over his ſhoulders, hung down to his loins.

His-

His preſence, which inſpired reſpect more than fear, ſoon recalled the frightened folks ſcared ſenſes, who, to recover this faint-heartedneſs excuſed themſelves by the miſrepreſentations diſtance cauſes on objects. The old man, who by that time, was come near enough to diſcern our ſpeaking Engliſh, lets fall a bundle of ſticks he had under one arm, and a hatchet he carried in the other hand, and runs to me, being the next to him, embracing me, and ſaying, dear countrymen, for I hear ye are Engliſhmen, by what accident are ye come hither? A place, the approach whereof is defended by a thouſand perils and dangers, and not to be come at but by a narrow eſcape of death. Are ye ſhipwrecked? No, thank God, ſaid I, moſt reverend father; it was mere curioſity that brought us hither; theſe perils, which you ſay defend the approach of this iſland, being abſent, by the extraordinary calmneſs of the ſea. But, if I may aſk, pray how came You hither? By the help of Providence, replied the good old man, who ſnatched me from out of the ravenous jaws of death, to fix me in this ſafe and peaceable ſpot of land. I was ſhipwrecked, thanks to my Maker, and was ſaved by being caſt away. I conceive, Sir, ſaid I, you have been chaſed by ſome pirates, and eſcaped ſlavery by ſtriking upon the rocks, which ſurroud this iſland: but now you have avoided that diſmal fate, embrace the lucky opportunity of getting away from a place ſo remote from human aſſiſtance, which your age makes you ſtand in need of. That's your miſtake, replied the old man: He who truſts in God, needs no other help. I allow that, Sir, ſaid I; but our truſt in God doth not require us to caſt away, or deſpiſe, the help of man. I do not in the leaſt queſtion your piety, but miſtruſt the frailty of nature, and debility of age; therefore would have you

you come and live within the reach of attendance. You may without ſlackening your devotion, live in the world; you ſhall have no occaſion to concen yourſelf with any Cares that may diſtrub your pious thoughts. No, replied the old man; was I to be made emperor of the univerſe, I would not be concerned with the world again; nor would you require me, did you but know the happineſs I enjoy out of it. Come along with me; and if, after you have ſeen how I live here, you perſiſt in your advice, I will ſay you have no notion of an happy life. I have, good Sir, ſaid I, already ſeen, with great admiration, your matchleſs habitation; but there are other neceſſaries your age requires: as clothes, to defend the injuries of the air; and meat ſuitable to the weakneſs of your ſtomach. That's your miſtake, replied the old man, I want for no clothes; I have a change for every ſeaſon of the year: I am not confined to faſhions, but ſuit my own conveniencies. Now this is my ſummer dreſs; I put on warmer as the weather grows colder: and for meat, I have fiſh, fleſh, and fowls; and as choice as a man can wiſh for. Come, you ſhall dine with me, and ten to one but I may give you veniſon, and perhaps a diſh of wild fowls too: let's go and ſee what providence has ſent us. So we went to a wood, about a mile farther, where he had faſtened ſeveral low nets, in different gaps, in the thickſet; in one of which happened to be an animal ſomething like a fawn, twice as big as an hare, the colour of a fox, and faced and footed like a goat. Did I not tell you, ſaid the good man, I might chance to give you veniſon? Now let's look after the fowls. So we went a little farther, at a place where he had hung a long net between two high trees, at the bottom of which was faſtened a bag of the ſame to received

the

the fowls; who in the night, being ſtopped by the net, fluttered to the bottom. There alſo happened to be game. A couple of fowls, made like woodcocks, but of the bigneſs and colour of a pheaſant, were taken at the bottom of a bag. Now, ſaid the old man, theſe I have, without committing the ſin of bidding leſs for them than I know they are really worth, or making the poulterers ſwear they coſt them more then they did. Well, now I may give you a diſh of fiſh alſo, 'tis but going half a mile, or thereabouts. There's no need, Sir, ſaid I, for any more, there are but four of us, and here's proviſion for half a ſcore; but if you are diſpoſed for fiſh, we have ſome in a boat on the other ſide of a rock: it is but going for them. Very well, ſaid the old man; it is but going about a mile, then ſtrip and wade over a lake, then climb up a rugged rock twice backward and forward, to fetch what we can have for only taking a pleaſant walk, all the while diverted with the ſweet harmony of a number of fine birds. Look here: this complaiſance often puts men to a world of needleſs trouble: come, we'll make a ſhift to pick a dinner out of theſe. Sir, ſaid I, 'tis no ſhift where there's ſuch plenty. Plenty! ſaid the old man; why, I tell ye, this is a ſecond garden of Eden; only here's no forbidden fruit, nor women to tempt a man. I ſee, Sir, ſaid I, Providence ſupplies you plentifully with neceſſaries, if age does not deprive you of ſtrength. Age! replied the old man, why I am not ſo old as that comes to, neither: I was but eight and twenty when I was caſt away, and that is but fifty years ago. Indeed, if I lived as you do that dwell in the wiſe world, who hurry on your days as if your end came on too ſlow, I might be accounted old. I do not gainſay, reverend father, but that you bear your age wonder-

ful

ful well; but a multiplicity of days muſt make the ſtrongeſt nature bind: yes, time will break the toughest conſtitution, and, by what you ſay, you have ſeen a conſiderable number of years. Yes, replied the old man, a few days have run over my head, but I never ſtrove to out-run them, as they do that live too faſt. Well, ſays he, you are a young man, and have ſeen fewer days than I; yet you may be almoſt worn out: come, match this, ſays he. With that he gave a hem, with ſuch a ſtrength and clearneſs, that the ſound made my ears tingle for ſome minutes after. Indeed, Sir, ſaid I, you have ſo far outdone what I can pretend to do, that I will not preſume to imitate you. Then I am afraid, ſaid he, you will prove to be the old man. Well, then, you, or your friend, the ſtrongeſt of you, fetch hither that ſtone; it does not look to be very heavy (pointing at a large ſtone that lay about two yards off) I'll endeavour, Sir, ſaid I, to roll it; for I dare ſay, it is paſt my ſtrength to lift it. So, to pleaſe the old man, I went to take it up; but could hardly move it. Come, come, ſaid the old gentleman, I find that muſt be work for me. With that he goes, takes up the ſtone, and toſſes it to the place he bid me bring it. I ſee, ſaid he, you have exerted your ſtrength too often, which makes you now ſo weak: well, you ſee the advantage of living remote from the world. Had you had leſs of human aſſiſtance, I am apt to believe you would not want it ſo ſoon as you are likely to do. Come, let's make much of that little ſtrength we have left, taking neceſſary ſupport at proper times, it is now paſt noon; therefore let us loſe no time, but haſte home to get our dinner ready. So we went back to the place where the bundle of ſticks lay, which

we

we made the young fellow with us carry, and went directly to the kitchen; where, whilſt he made a fire, one caſt the animal, and the other two pulled the fowls. I am ſorry, ſaid the old man, you muſt take that trouble; but your preſence has frightened away my ſervant, who uſed to do that work for me. Have you a ſervant, then, Sir? ſaid I. Yes, ſaid he, and one a native of this iſland. Then I find, Sir, ſaid I, this iſland is inhabited. Yes, anſwered the old man, with monkeys and myſelf, but no body elſe, thank God: otherwiſe I can tell you, I ſhould hardly have lived ſo long. Then, Sir, ſaid, I ſuppoſe that was it we ſaw run up a tree. Yes, ſaid he, my monkey, like myſelf, loves not much company. Pray, Sir, ſaid I, how did you bring him ſo well under command, as to keep with you, when he has liberty to run away? I wonder the wild ones do not entice him from you. I had him young, replied the old man, and made very much of him, which thoſe creatures dearly love: beſides, when he was grown up, the wild ones would not ſuffer him amongſt them; ſo, that he was forced to remain with me. I had another before this; but he, I may ſay, was ſent by Providence, both to be an help and diverſion to me; for he was ſo knowing, that he took a great deal of labour off my hands, and diſperſed many anxious hours, which the irkſomeneſs of my ſolicitude had created. 'Tis now about twelve years ſince; for I keep a memorial, which indeed I deſigned to have been a journal; but I unfortunately let the regular order of the days ſlip out of my memory; however, I obſerved a ſeventh day, and reckoned the years from winter to winter; ſo I cannot well miſtake.

One

One day, when I had roaſted a quantity of roots, which I eat inſtead of bread, having ſpread them on my table and cheſt too cool, in order to lay them by for uſe; I went out, leaving my door open, to let the air in.

Having walked an hour or two, I returned home, where I found a monkey, whom the ſmell of the hot roots had brought; who, during my abſence, had been eating. My preſence very much ſurprized him, yet he ſtill kept his place, only diſcontinued eating, ſtaring me in the face: the unexpected gueſt at once ſtartled me, and filled me with admiration; for, certainly, no creature of its kind could be compared to it, for beauty. His back was of a lively green, his face and belly of a lively yellow: his coat, all over, ſhining like burniſhed gold. The extraordinary beauty of the creature raiſed in me an ardent deſire to keep him; but I deſpaired of ever making him tame, being come to his full growth: therefore having reſolved to keep him tied, I went in and ſhut the door. The beaſt, which, till then, had not offered to make his eſcape, appeared very much diſturbed, and ſtared about him for ſome place to get out at: perceiving his diſorder, I did not advance, but turned my back to him; to give him time to compoſe himſelf, which he in a ſhort time did, as appeared by his falling to eat again; which made me conceive hopes that I ſhould, in time, make him familiar. Having about me ſtale roaſted roots, which eat much pleaſanter than the freſh, and are leſs ſtuffing, I threw ſome at him, at which he ſeemed diſpleaſed, and ſtood ſtill a while, ſtaring in my face; but my looking well pleaſed, which I believe the animal was ſenſible of, made him pick them up, and fall to eating with a freſh appetite. I was overjoyed at his eaſy compoſure; ſo reached him water in

in a ſhell that the want of nothing might induce him to a retreat. I ſet it down as near him as I could, without diſturbing him, he came to it very orderly, and, having drank his fill, he laid it down, and looked me in the face, careleſly ſcratching his backſide: ſeeing he had done, I advanced, and took away the ſhell at which he never ſtirred.

The forward diſpoſition of the beaſt towards a perfect familiarity, made me reſolve to ſtay within the remainder of the day, no wiſe queſtioning but my company would, in a great meaſure, advance it. So I made ſhift to ſup upon a few roots I had about me, and went pretty early to bed; where I was no ſooner laid, but the creature got acroſs the feet thereof, and continued very quiet till next morning when I got up; at which time he was alſo watching my actions. I made very much of him, which he took very compoſedly; ſtanding ſtill to be ſtroaked. Then, indeed, I thought myſelf, in a manner, ſecure of him, and gave him his belly full, as I had done the day before; but, having a preſſing occaſion to go out, I went to the door, thinking to ſhut him in till my return: but he followed me ſo cloſe, that I could not open it without endangering his getting out; which though he he appeared pretty tame, I did not care to venture, our acquaintance being ſo very new: yet, as I was obliged to go, I did run the hazard; ſo opened the door by degrees, that, in caſe the beaſt ſhould offer to run, I might take the opportunity to ſlip out, and keep him in; but, the creature never offering to go any farther than I went, I truſted him to go with me, hoping that, if he went away, the kind uſage he met with would, one day or other, make him come back again: but, to my great ſurprize as well as ſatisfaction, he readily returned with me, having waited my time; yet, as I had occaſion

occaſion to go out a ſecond time, wanting ſticks to make a fire, for which I was obliged to go near the place where moſt of his kind reſorted, I was afraid to truſt him with me, leaſt he ſhould be decoyed by the others; therefore, having taken up a bundle of cords, with which I tie up my faggots, I watched an opportunity to get out, and leave him behind: but the beaſt was certainly apprehenſive of my deſign; for he always kept near the door, looking ſtedfaſtly at my bundle of cords, as deſirous of ſuch another; which I not having for him, cut a piece off mine, and gave it him: and, ſeeing I could not leave him behind, I ventured to let him go with me, which he did very orderly, never offering to go one ſtep out of the way, tho' others, of this kind, came to look at him as he went by.

Being come to the place where I uſed to cut dry ſticks, having cut down a ſufficient quantity, I began to lay ſome acroſs my cord. The creature, having taken notice of it, did the ſame to his, and with ſo much dexterity and agility, that his faggot was larger, and ſooner made than mine; which, by that time, being large enough, and as much as he could well carry, I bound it up, which ſet him to do the ſame with his, which was abundantly too large a load for him.

Our faggots being made, I took up that which I had made, to ſee how he would go about taking up his; which, being much too heavy for him, he could not lift: ſo running round it, I believe twenty times he looked me in the face, as craving help. Having been ſufficiently diverted with the out-of-the-way ſhifts he made, I gave him mine, and took up his: the poor animal appeared overjoyed at the exchange; therefore chearfully takes up the bundle, and follows me home.

Seeing myſelf, according to all probability, ſure of the dear creature, whoſe late actions gave me ſuch ground

ground to hope from him both ſervice and pleaſure, I returned my hearty thanks to kind providence for its late prodigious gift; for certainly it was never heard of before, that, in a deſert place, one of thoſe wild animals, who fly at the ſingle appearance of an human creature, ſhould voluntarily give itſelf to a man, and, from the very beginning, be ſo docile and tractable. O! ſurely it was endued with more than natural inſtinct! for perfect reaſon was ſeen in all its actions. Indeed I was happy whilſt I had him; but my happineſs, alas! was not of long ſtanding. As he ſpoke, I perceived tears in his eyes. Pray, Sir, ſaid I, what became of that wonderful creature? Alas! ſaid he, he was killed by monkeys of the other kind, which fell upon him one day, as he was going for water by himſelf: for the poor dear creature was grown ſo knowing, that if, at any time, either fireing or water was wanted, I had nothing to do but to give him the bundle of cords, or the empty veſſel, and he would ſtrait go and fetch either: in ſhort, he wanted nothing but ſpeech to complete him for human ſociety. Indeed, Sir, ſaid I, I cannot blame you for bemoaning the loſs of ſo incomparable a creature; the account you give of him well entitles his memory to regret: but I hope this you have now, in a great meaſure, makes up your loſs. O! not by far, replied the old man: Indeed he goes about with me, and will carry a faggot, or a veſſel of water, pick a fowl, turn the ſpit or ſtring, when meat is roaſting; yet he is nothing like my late dear Beaufidelle; for ſo I call that moſt lovely creature: beſides, this is unlucky; in imitating me, he often does me miſchief. It was but the other day that I had been writing for five or ſix hours; I had occaſion to go out and happened to leave my pen and ink upon

on the table, and the parchment I had been writing on close by it: I was no sooner gone, but the mischevous beast falls to work, scribbling over every word I had been writing; and, when he had done, he lays it by in the chest, as he saw me do what I had written, and takes out another, which he does the same to, and so to half a score more; my return prevented his doing more mischief: however, in a quarter of an hour, that I was absent, he blotted out as much as I had been full six months writing. Indeed I was angry, and could have beaten him: but that I considered my revenge would not have repaired the damage, but rather, perhaps add to my loss, by making the beast run away. Pray, Sir, said I, how came you by him? Did he also give himself to you? No, replied the old man, I had him young, and by mere accident, unexpected and unsought for: having lost both time and labour about getting one in the room of him I had so unfortunately lost. The old ones are so fond of their young, that they are never from them, unless in their play they chace one another into the other kind's quarters, where their dams dare not follow them: for they are such enemies to one another, that they watch all opportunities to catch all they can of the contrary sort, which they immediately strangle: which keeps their increase very backward, that would otherwise grow too numerous for the food the island produces; which is, I believe the cause of their animosity.

About eight years ago, which is the time I have had this beast, I was walking under one of the clusters of trees where the green sort of monkeys harbour, which being the largest and most shady in the island: I took the most delight therein: as I was walking, at a small distance from me this creature dropt off a tree, and

and lay for dead; which, being of the grey kind, made me wonder leſs at the accident. I went, and took him up; and, accidentally handling his throat, I opened his windpipe, which was almoſt ſqueezed cloſe by that which took him, which my ſudden coming prevented from ſtrangling quite. I was extreamly well pleaſed at the event, by which I got what my paſt cares and diligence, never could produce me. Having pretty well recovered its breath, and ſeeing no viſible hurt about it, I imagined that I ſoon might recover it quite; ſo haſtened home with it, gave it warm milk, and laid it on my bed: ſo that with careful nurſing, I quite recovered him; and, with good keeping, made the rogue thrive to that degree, that he has outgrown the reſt of his kind. No queſtion, Sir, ſaid I, having taken ſuch pains with him, you love him as well as his predeceſſor. I cannot ſay ſo, neither, replied the old man; tho' I cannot ſay but that I love the creature: but its having the ill fortune to be of that unlucky kind which was the death of my dear Beaufidelle, in a great meaſure leſſens my affection. Beſides, he falls ſo ſhort, both of his merit and beauty, that I muſt give the deceaſed the preference: and, was it not for his cunning tricks, which often divert me, I ſhould hardly value him at all; but he is ſo very cunning and facetious, that he makes me love him, notwithſtanding I mortally hate his kind. I muſt divert you, whilſt dinner is getting ready, with an account of ſome of his tricks.

Being extreamly fond of me, he very ſeldom would be from me, but followed me every where: and, as he uſed to go with me when I went to examine my nets, ſeeing me now and then take out game, he would, of his own accord, when he ſaw me buſy writing, go and fetch what happened to be taken.

One

One day finding a fowl in the net-bag, he pulled it alive as he brought it home; ſo that I could not ſee any thing whereby to diſcern its kind. As ſoon as he came in, he ſet it down with ſuch motions as expreſſed joy; the poor naked fowl was no ſooner out of his clutches, but that it took to its legs, for want of wings: its ſudden eſcape ſo ſurpriſed the captor, that he ſtood amazed for a while, which gave the poor creature time to gain a conſiderable ſcope of ground; but the aſtoniſhed beaſt, being recovered from his ſurpriſe, ſoon made after it; but was a conſiderable time before he could catch it, having nothing to lay hold of; ſo that the fowl would ſlip out of his hands. The race held about a quarter of an hour, in which time the poor creature, having run itſelf out of breath, was forced to lie down before its purſuer, who immediately threw himſelf upon it; ſo took it up in his arms, and brought it home, but was not ſo ready to ſet it down as before: for he held it by one leg till I had laid hold of it.

I had a ſecond time as good diverſion, but after another manner. One morning early, whilſt I was buſy in my cottage, he went out, unperceived by me; and, having been a conſiderable time abſent, I feared that ſuch another accident had befallen him as that which happened to his predeceſſor; ſo I went to ſee after him: and as he would often go and viſit the nets in the woods, I went there firſt, where I found him very buſy with ſuch an animal as this we have here, which he found taken in one of the gap-nets, and being near as big as he, kept him a great while ſtruggling for maſterſhip; ſometimes he would take it by the ears, now and then by one leg, next by the tail; but could not get him along; at laſt he laid hold of one of his hind legs, and with the other

hand ſmote him on the back, in order to drive him, not being able to pull him along; but the beaſt, being too ſtrong, ſtill made towards the thickſet, where he certainly would have hauled the driver, had I not come up to help him. Thus the old gentleman entertained us with his monkey's tricks whilſt dinner was dreſſing.

The dinner being ready, we went to the dwelling-place to eat it, leaving the young fellow that was with us to attend the roaſted meat, while we eat the firſt diſh.

The old gentleman having laid the cloth, which, tho' ſomething coarſe, being made out of part of a ſhip-ſail was very clean, he laid three ſhells on it, about the bigneſs of a middle ſized plate, but as beautiful as any nakes of pearl I ever ſaw. Gentlemen, ſays he, if you can eat off ſhells, ye are welcome; I have no better plates to give you. Sir, ſaid I, theſe are preferable to ſilver ones, in my opinion; and I very much queſtion whether any prince in Europe can produce ſo curious a ſervice. They may be richer, replied the old man, but not cleaner.

The firſt diſh he ſerved was ſoup in a large deep ſhell, as fine as the firſt, and one ſpoon made of ſhell, which he ſaid was all his ſtock, being not uſed to, nor expecting company: however, he fetched a couple of muſcle ſhells, which he waſhed very clean; then gave Alvarado one, and took the other himſelf, obliging me to make uſe of the ſpoon: ſo we ſat down, Alvarado and I upon the cheſt, which we drew near the table, and the old gentleman (tho' much againſt his will) upon the chair.

Being ſet down, we fell to eating the ſoup, whoſe fragrant

fragrant ſmall excited my appetite; and I profeſs the taſte thereof was ſo excellent, that I never eat any comparable to it at Pontac's; nor any-where before: It was made of one half of the beaſt we took in the morning, with ſeveral ſorts of herbs which eat like artichokes, aſparagus, and celery; there were alſo bits of roaſted roots in it, inſtead of toaſted bread, which added much to the richneſs of it, taſting like cheſnuts: But, what ſurpriſed me moſt, there were green peaſe in it, whoſe extraordinary ſweetneſs was diſcernible from every other ingredient. Pity, ſaid I, the acceſs to this iſland is ſo difficult; what a bleſſed ſpot of land would it make, were it but inhabited! Here naturally grows what in Europe we plow, till, and labour hard for. You ſay, replied the old man, this would be a bleſſed ſpot of ground, if it was inhabited: Now I am quite of another opinion; for I think its bleſſing conſiſts in its not being inhabited, being free of thoſe curſes your populous and celebrated cities abound in; here's nothing but praiſes, and thankſgivings heard: And as for nature beſtowing freely, and of her own accord, what in Europe you are obliged, by induſtry and hard labour, in a manner to force from her, wonder not at: conſider how much you daily rob her of her due, and charge her with ſlander and calumny: Don't you frequently ſay, if a man is addicted to any vice, that it is his nature, when it is the effect and fruit of his corruption? So nature, who attended the great origin of all things at the creation, is now, by vile wretches deemed in fault for all their wickedneſs: Had man remained in his firſt and natural ſtate of innocence, nature would alſo have continued her original indulgence over him: We may now think ourſelves very happy, if that bleſſing attends our la-

bour which before the fall of man flowed on him, accompanied with eaſe and pleaſure.

Now theſe peaſe, which have ſo much raiſed your ſurprize, are indeed the growth of this iſland, tho' not its natural product, but the gifts of providence, and the fruits of labour and induſtry. I have tilled the ground; providence procured the ſeed; nature gave it growth, and time increaſe: with ſeven peaſe and three beans, I have, in four years time, raiſed ſeed enough to ſtock a piece of ground, out of which I gather yearly, a ſufficient quantity for my uſe, beſides preſerving freſh ſeed. No doubt, Sir, ſaid I, but, when right means are taken, proſperity will attend. By that time, having eaten ſufficiently of the ſoup, he himſelf would carry the remains to the young man in the kitchen, and fetch in the boiled meat and oyſter ſauce, which he brought in another ſhell much of the ſame nature with that which the ſoup was ſerved in, but ſomething ſhallower, which eat as delicious as houſe lamb.

Having done with that, he fetches in the other half of the beaſt roaſted, and ſeveral ſorts of delicate pickles which I never eat of before, and muſhrooms, but of a curious colour, flavour, and taſte: Theſe, ſaid he, are the natural product of a particular ſpot of ground; where at a certain time of the year, he ſaid, he gathered, for the ſpace of ſix days only, three ſizes of muſhrooms: For tho' they were all buttons, and fit to pickle; by that time he had gathered all, he had alſo to ſtew, and ſome about four inches over, which he broiled: and they eat as choice as any veal cutlet.

Theſe pickles, Sir, ſaid I, though far exceeding any I ever did eat in Europe, are really, at this time, needleſs;

needleſs; the meat wanting nothing to raiſe its reliſh; no fleſh being more delicious.

Having done with that, I offered to take it away, but he in no wiſe would permit me; ſo went away with it himſelf, and brought the fowls, at which I was ſomewhat vexed; for I feared I ſhould find no room in my ſtomach for any, having eat ſo heartily of the meat; but having, at his preſſing requeſt, taſted them, my appetite renewed at their inexpreſſible deliciouſneſs; ſo I fell to eating afreſh.

Having done with that diſh, the young man, having nothing to do in the kitchen, came and was bid to take away, and fall to: In the mean time, the good old man, fetched us, out of his dairy, a ſmall cheeſe of his own making, which being ſet down, he related to us the unacountable manner he came by the antelopes which ſupplied him with the milk it was made with; which introduced ſeveral weighty remarks on the wonderful acts of providence, and the ſtrictneſs of the obligations we lie under to our great benefactor; likewiſe the vaſt encouragement we have to love and ſerve God, the benefits and comforts of a clear conſcience, as alſo the ineſtimable treaſure of content: From that he epitomized the different tempers and diſpoſitions of men, much commending timely education, as being a means to reverſe and change evil inclinations; highly praiſing the charity of thoſe pious people who chuſe to beſtow good ſchooling upon poor folks children, before cloathing, and even food; the firſt being rather the moſt neceſſary, and the laſt the eaſieſt to come at.

That diſcourſe being ended, he enquired very carefully after the ſtate of his dear native country, which, he ſaid, he left fifty years ago in a very indulgent diſpoſition. I gave him the beſt account

I could at that time of all the tranſactions that had happened in England ſince his abſence. The relation of paſt evils, ſaid he, are like pictures of earthquakes and ſhipwreck, which affect the mind but ſlightly: And tho' I think myſelf out of any prince's power, yet I ſhall always partake with my countrymen's grief: Pray be explicit; What king have we now? A complete patriot, and father to his ſubjects, ſaid I; both tender-hearted and merciful, encouraging virtue, and ſuppreſſing vice, a promoter of religion, and an example of charity. Then, ſaid he, in a manner which expreſſed zeal and joy, long may that pious monarch live, and his bleſſed poſterity for ever grace the Britiſh throne! And may Old England, by its faithful obedience and loyalty, henceforth atone for its paſt rebellions, that it may remove that execrable reproach it now lies under; To which we all ſaid, Amen. Then he filled up the ſhell we drank out of, and drank good king George's health, which was ſucceeded with that of the royal family, and proſperity to the church. Thus ended a moſt delicious and ſplendid dinner, and a converſation both delightful and inſtructive: But, having not as then mentioned any thing about his own hiſtory, which I exceedingly longed to enquire into, I begged him to inform us by what accident he came hither, and how he had ſo long maintained a good ſtate of health. To which he anſwered, time would not permit him to relate his own hiſtory, being very long, and the remainder of the day too ſhort: but that he would, before we parted, give it me in writing; having, for want of other occupation, made a memorial: But as to the maintaining of his health, he would tell me by word of mouth. The receipt, ſaid he,

is

is both ſhort and eaſy: yet I fear you will not be able to follow it: Look you, you muſt uſe none but wholeſome exerciſes, obſerve a ſober diet, and live a pious life: Now, if you can confine yourſelf to this way of living, I'll be bound that you will both preſerve your health and waſte leſs money: But, what's more valuable than all that, you will not endanger your precious ſoul. I returned him thanks for his good advice, and promiſed him I would obſerve it as ſtrictly as I could. I am afraid, replied he, that will not be at all: You have too many powerful obſtacles, the world and the fleſh, from whom your affections muſt be entirely withdrawn; and all commerce prohibited, which is morally impoſſible whilſt living: Therefore, ſince you are obliged to converſe with the world, I will give you a few cautions, which, if rightly taken, may be of uſe to you.

Make not the world your enemy, nor rely too much on its fidelity.

Be not too free with your friend: repetitions of favours often wear out friendſhip.

Waſte not your vigour or ſubſtance on women, leaſt weakneſs and want be your reward.

Secrets are not ſafe in a woman's breaſt; 'tis a confinement the ſex can't bear.

Paſs no contract over liquor; wine overcomes reaſon, and dulls the underſtanding.

He who games puts his money in jeopardy, and is not ſure of his own.

There's but little honour to wager on ſure grounds, and leſs wiſdom to lay upon a chance.

And in all your dealings take this for a conſtant rule:

He whom unlawful means advance to gain,
Inſtead of comfort, finds a conſtant pain:
What e'er by lawful arts we do poſſeſs,
Old age and ſickneſs make it comfortleſs.
Be rull'd by me not to increaſe your ſtore
By means unjuſt; for 'twill but make you poor,
Take but your due, and never covet more.

I returned him thanks for his good morals, the copy of which I begged he would give me in writing, for the better putting them in practice: to which he readily conſented, wiſhing I might obſerve them; and being very ſure that I ſhould reap a conſiderable benefit thereby, both here and hereafter.

The day being pretty far ſpent, I was obliged to think of going, which grieved me much; for I was ſo taken with his company, that if I had not had a father and mother, whoſe years required my preſence, I would have ſpent the reſt of my days with him. I was ſo delighted with his company, and pleaſed with his way of living, that I almoſt overlooked my duty: but, after a ſtruggle with my inclination, I was obliged to yield to nature. Thus, having expreſſed my vexation to leave ſo good a man, I took my leave. The good old man, perceiving my regret to leave him, could not conceal his to part with me. Indeed, ſaid he, with tears in his eyes, I ſhould have been very glad to have had a fellow creature in this ſolitary iſland, eſpecially one whom I think poſſeſſed of a good inclination; which I perceive you have, by your reluctance at leaving this innocent garden of life. I imagine that you have relations in the world that may ſtand in need of you; Heaven protect and ſend you ſafe to them! I don't imagine that you will ever

ſee

this iſland again; nor would I adviſe you to venture, the approach of it is ſo dangerous: Therefore, before you go, let me ſhew you ſome of the rarities with which it abounds. I told him, I was afraid time would not permit; but as he ſaid, that about an hour or two would do, and we had day light enough, I went along with him.

Going out, and ſeeing the guns ſtand behind the door, I aſked what he did with them? I keep them, ſaid he, for a trophy of providence's victory over my enemies, and a monument of my fourth miraculous deliverance. As we went along, he related to us the manner in which he had been ſacrilegiouſly robbed once by Indians: villainouſly inveſted twice by pirates; the ruſſians having combined to carry him away, like a ſlave, to their own country, and there make a ſhew of him, as if he had been a monſter.

Talking, we walked under ſeveral of the beforementioned cluſters of trees which proceed from one ſingle plant: Being come to one larger than the reſt, and which he ſaid he frequented moſt, it being the largeſt in the iſland; this, ſaid he, covers with its own branches, a whole acre of land; ſo made ſeveral remarks on the wonderful works of nature; which, ſaid he, were all intended for the uſe and pleaſure of man; every thing in the univerſe containing ſuch different virtues and properties as were requiſite to render life happy. From that he made ſeveral more reflections on the fatal effects of diſobedience, which is accounted a ſlight breach in duty, but is the mother of all ſins.

That diſcourſe held for a conſiderable time, till a parcel of each different kind of monkeys, having met, fell to fighting, obſerving an admirable order during the fray; which withdrew our admiration

from the preceding ſubject, and ſtopt us awhile to obſerve them.

The ſcuffle was very diverting whilſt it laſted, which was but a ſhort time; for they happened to perceive us, at which they parted, each ſort running to their own quarters, which were not very diſtant from one another, ſo that from it they could ſee each other's motions. I am ſorry, ſaid I, the battle was ſo ſoon over; they cuffed one another ſo prettily, that I could have ſtood an hour to ſee them. If you like the ſport, ſaid the old man, I can ſoon ſet them at it again. With that he takes out of his breeches pocket ſome roaſted roots, which he commonly carried about him, to throw at them when he went that way, which made them leſs ſhy of him.

Having broke the roots in bits, he laid them down in their ſight; for they on both ſides were peeping from under the leaves of the trees where they harboured: Then he cuts a ſcore of ſticks, about the bigneſs of one's finger, and near a foot and an half long, and laid them over the bits of roots: Then we retired to ſome ſmall diſtance, and hid ourſelves behind the trees.

We were no ſooner out of ſight but that they haſtened to the meat; the green monkeys, having leſs ground to go, were at them firſt; yet never ſtopt, but went on to hinder the others approach, who vigorouſly ſtrove to gain ground. The ſtruggle was hard, and the victory often wavering; each party alternately gave way: At laſt the grey ſort kept the advantage, and drove their adverſaries back, who being come where the ſticks lay, immediately took them up, and charged their enemies with a freſh courage, like a yielding army that has received new forces: Thus, with their clubſters in the front, they

fell

fell on their adverſaries with great vigour, knocking them down like our Engliſh mob at an election; ſo drove them back again almoſt to their own quarter.

In the mean time ſtragglers of both kinds, who had not joined with the main bodies of the armies, ſeeing the coaſts clear, and the proviſions unguarded, unanimouſly fell to plunder, and quietly did eat what their comrades fought for; which the combatants perceiving, left off fighting, and of one accord turned upon the plunderers, who, by that time having devoured the booty, left them the field without contending any farther.

The battle being over, the old gentleman would have us to go on, leaſt, ſaid he, they ſhould fall to it again out of revenge; for thoſe creatures are very ſpiteful.

Having diſperſed them by our advancing, as intended, we walked from under the trees at the outſide, to have a better view of the rock, which in ſome places, he ſaid, changes its form as one approaches it: And, as he ſaid, being got clear of the trees, we ſaw at a diſtance, as it were, a conſiderable number of buildings, and here-and there ſomething like ſteeples, which repreſented an handſome city; and ſeemingly the houſes appeared ſo plain, that, had I not been apprized of the illuſion, I ſhould have taken it for ſuch; but Alvarado and the young fellow, could not be perſuaded but what we ſaw were really buildings, and even in the iſland, though the old gentleman made us ſtop a while, the better to obſerve every thing; then bid us keep our eyes fixed at what we looked at, and go on: We perceived every particular of what we obſerved to change its form; that which at firſt ſeemed to be fronting, ſhewed itſelf either ſideways or backwards; and ſo of every object, till, being come at a certain diſtance, all the agree-

ableneſs of the perſpective, of a ſudden, turned into its real ſhape like a phantom; which, whilſt viſible, ſcreens that which it ſtands before; but, by its vaniſhing, leaves it diſcovered.

Being come as near the rock as the lake that parts it would permit, we could diſcern nothing in it that could in the leaſt ſoften its ruggedneſs, or give it a more agreeable aſpect, than thoſe which are repreſented in the pictures of ſhipwrecks.

The old gentleman, thereupon, made ſeveral learned obſervations on the alterations that diſtance works upon objects, and ſhewed how eaſily our organs of ſight may be deceived; drawing from thence this inference, That we ought not to be too poſitive of the reality of what we ſee afar off, nor to affirm for truth that which we only heard of.

Having ended that diſcourſe, he carried us to the other ſide of the jetting part of the rock, which, advancing like a baſtion of a fortified wall, ſcreen'd from our eyes a ſecond piece of wonder; a fine rainbow, iſſuing, as it were, out of the mouth of a giant, lying on a rock, reaching quite over the lake: At the bottom of it I could not but ſtop to admire the various colours it conſiſted of, which far exceeded, in beauty and livelineſs, any I ever ſaw in the ſky, I preſently imagined that it proceeded from the rays of the ſun falling upon ſome pond, or other ſtanding water, whoſe reflections roſe, and met the tops; which cauſed that beautiful circle. But Alvarado, who, by what he had ſeen before, concluded that the iſland was inchanted, ſaid, it was another illuſion, which the place was full of; and would have gone away, but that the old man fell a laughing, and ſaid, 'tis a ſign you ſelcom inquire into natural cauſes: Well, do but come a little nearer to it, and you will find that which you term

term an illuſion, is the natural effect of all fountains when the ſun ſhines.

Being come to the place it proceeded from, it proved, as he ſaid, only a fountain, but of the cleareſt and ſweeteſt water that ever was taſted; but the place it iſſued out of was changed from the likeneſs of a giant to that of ſome ſtrange ſort of creature; which, tho' having no particular reſemblance, yet would bear being compared to ſeveral different things. The old man's opinion was, that it reſembled a whale ſpirting water out at one noſtril. Alvarado ſuppoſed it was more like an horſe or a cow; and rather the laſt, there being horns plain to be ſeen. For my part, I could find no proper ſimilitude to it, but that of an old ruin'd monument, which formerly they built over the heads of ſprings. Timothy Anchors (for that was the name of the young fellow that was with us) being aſked, what he could make of it? Why really, ſaid he, nothing, unleſs it be an old patched-up pump that ſtands at the end of my mother's court in Roſemary lane (which every ſpring runs out of itſelf); which compariſon made us all to laugh.

Thus we differed in our opinions as to the likeneſs, yet agreed, that it was the fineſt fountain, and the beſt water, we ever ſaw or drank. What ſurprized me moſt, was, the force wherewith it ſprung from the rock that ſtood full five yards from the place it fell on, which was another ſubject of admiration; for certainly the arts of men could not have invented nor compleated a more compact or pleaſanter baſon, tho' it had been for a fountain to adorn a monarch's garden: Indeed there were no maſons, nor any expert artiſt's exquiſite works to be ſeen, but a great deal of nature's matchleſs underſtanding: There regularity, dimenſion,

dimenſion, and proportion, concerted to make it uſeful, convenient, and agreeable.

The baſon was very near round, about eight feet diameter, a bank around it near a foot high, and as broad at top, ſlanting gently at the bottom, both inſide and outſide, which made a moſt pleaſant and uniform bank, adorned with various ſmall flowers and herbs of divers beautiful colours, and moſt fragrant ſmells.

Having viewed with pleaſure and amazement ſuch regularity in a wild and uninhabited place, I walked about it as long as the time I could ſtay would permit: I propoſed going, but the old gentleman, taking me by the hand, ſtopt me: You have, ſaid he, beſtowed a conſiderable time in obſerving the fertility of this iſland; now pray allow one minute for conſideration: The object you have been admiring all this time is as wonderful and ſurprizing, as beautiful and pleaſant; You ſee this fountain, which runs ſtiff, and as large as your thumb, and therefore by computation may be allow'd to give near an hundred gallons of water in an hour: Now it runs night and day; it neither decreaſes, nor runs over its bank, but keeps to the ſame height. This, as you ſay, Sir, ſaid I, is really worth inquiring into: So I went ſeveral times round it, ſearching for the place, whereby the overplus of the Compliment did iſſue: but could not diſcover it. Come, ſaid he, ſeek no more for that which nature has ſo well concealed: I have ſpent many hours in that inquiry, and ſtill remain ignorant; but have found the place out of which it runs into a fine fiſh-pond, about a mile inland; we will make it in our way to the lake; we may look at it as we go by, but can make no long ſtay. So we went on.

Going along, we came by an hollow part of the rock,

rock, which went in like an alcove, with a great many concavities in it in rows one above another, as round niches where figures ſtand. Now, ſaid the old man, we are here, I will entertain you with an inviſible chorus of harmonious voices, little inferior to haut-boys, trumpets, or other melodious muſic: here I twice come and pay my devotions each day. Alvarado, who, by what he had already ſeen, was prepoſſeſſed that the iſland with full of inchantments, was now certain of it; and looked upon that place in the rock to be the receptacle of fiends, and evil ſpirits; ſo would by no means ſtay; but takes his leave, ſaying, he was not very curious of ſupernatural things. Supernatural, ſaid the old man, you can't well call it, though to you it may be very amazing: It is therefore well deſerving your ſight; I mean your hearing; the eyes having no ſhare in the entertainment: we ſhall only ſing a few pſalms; I am ſure there can be no harm in that, but rather good, being an holy exerciſe in divine worſhip, in which all good ſouls ought to join. That may be, ſaid Alvarado; but I love to ſee thoſe with whom I worſhipped: I don't think myſelf as yet company for ſpirits. As for your part, ſaid Alvarado, (ſpeaking to me) you may do what you pleaſe; but take care your curioſity don't coſt you too dear. Tim and I will wait for you in the boat; but pray be not too long before you come. So, having returned the old gentleman thanks for his kind entertainment, they went away; at which the good man was much affronted. What, ſaid he, do your friends imagine I deal with ſpirits? beſides, where did they ever hear, that devils lov'd to ſing pſalms? for here ſhall nothing elſe be ſung: I would not for the world, that thoſe admirable echoes, that hitherto have repeated nothing but the Almighty's praiſes, ſhould be polluted with the

found

ſound of any profane words. I endeavoured to excuſe their timorouſneſs, ſaying, it was not a failing peculiar to themſelves only, but to many beſides. The old man allowed it, attributing the cauſe thereof to a very pernicious cuſtom nurſes have to frighten children when they cry, with buggabos, and ſuch things, to make them quiet; which frightful ideas often make ſuch deep impreſſion on their puerile minds, that, when they come to mature age, it is hardly worn out; which intimidates many.

That diſcourſe being ended, we advanced as near that part of the rock as the lake would permit, which in that place was not above ſeven or eight feet broad; ſo that we were within the concavity of the rock. Now, ſaid the old man, let us ſit down on this bank, and ſing the hundredth and ſeventeenth pſalm. Indeed, Sir, ſaid I, I don't know it by heart, and I have no pſalm-book about me. Well then, ſaid he, I'll ſing myſelf; ſo begins; but with ſuch a clear and loud voice, managed with ſo much ſkill and judgment, that it exceeded all the ſinging I ever heard before; and was repeated by ſuch a number of melodious echoes that one would have believed there were a hundred voices in chorus.

The melody ſo tranſported me, that I willingly would have ſpent not only the remainder of the day, but the ſucceeding alſo; the ecſtaſy having quite put out of my mind the neceſſity of my going, and the danger of delaying: But the good man having ſung an evening hymn after the pſalm, which he ſaid he ſung every night, he takes me by the hand: Now, ſaid he, is not this emulation? Who would not ſing with ſuch a chorus of choriſters as you might imagine was there? Indeed, Sir, ſaid I, this has ſo great reſemblance to the relation we have given us in holy

hiſtory

hiſtory of the ſuperior joys the bleſſed poſſeſs in heaven, that I thought myſelf already there; for which reaſon I would willingly end my days here. This is impoſſible, ſaid the old gentleman; nor can you ſpend here many more moments: I have the fiſh-pond to ſhew you yet; come let's go. So we went on about fifty paces from thence more inland: We ſaw at a ſmall diſtance, between the trees, a parcel of fowls like ducks, but conſiderably larger, which flew away from the pond at our approach towards them. He told me how he came by the old one that bred them, of which he was robbed.

At length being come to the pond, I was ſurprized at the clearneſs of the water, at the bottom of which ſeemed to be large rubies, emeralds, iacinths, and other coloured ſtones; till, being come to the brink of it, thoſe which I took for precious ſtones, proved to be fiſhes by their ſwimming about, which, to my thinking, looked like ſtars ſhooting from place to place in the ſky. Having ſpent ſeveral minutes in admiring the ſurpriſing nature and beauty of the fiſhes, I took notice of the pond, which was about forty yards in length, and near thirty in breadth: Its form was a broken oval, ſinking in and out here and there, which made it the more agreeable: All round it grew divers ſorts of herbs intermixed with flowers of different colours, and here and there a baſket on ſticks, which the old man told me he made and ſet there for his ducks to breed in. The day being far ſpent, the old man, after having ſhewed me the places at one ſide of the pond wherein the baſon emptied itſelf, as alſo the other ſide whereby the pond ran into the lake, takes me by the hand: Come, ſaid he, I will keep you no longer: night comes on apace, and the retreat from this iſland is dangerous; therefore I would

would have you improve the ſhort remains of the day, to avoid the dangers the darkneſs of the night may lead you into: So let us go home, that I may give you the memorial I have promiſed you, and then my bleſſing, and hearty prayers for your ſafe departure, and happy arrival. So we went to his habitation, where he gave me a roll of parchment.

Here it is, ſaid he, in a rough and unpolite language; for I did not write it out of oſtentation, or to exert my parts, but to keep me in mind of the many mercies I have received from heaven ever ſince my youth, and to record the wonderful effects of providence; that if ever theſe writings ſhould have the luck to fall into the hands of men after my deceaſe, they might be an encouragement to the deſtitute, and a comfort to the afflicted, that he who rightly applies himſelf, and firmly truſts in the Almighty, ſhall, at his extremity, find relief: And now my intent is in ſome meaſure anſwered, expecting you will reviſe and publiſh it when you come to old England. I muſt injoin you not to give it out as my own dictation, but an hiſtory taken from heads out of my memorial; for I have been obliged to inſert particulars, and uſe ſuch expreſſions, without which the account I gave of myſelf would have been imperfect; and which, being related as by me, may chance to be accounted ſelf flattery, which is a cenſure I would willingly avoid. I told him he might depend upon it, I ſhould always, and on all accounts be very tender of any thing that could in the leaſt leſſen the merit of the ſubject, or tarniſh the luſtre of the hiſtory.

With that the good man takes me in his open arms, and embraces me over and over with all the tenderneſs words and actions could expreſs; ſaying, with tears in his eyes, that my exit was a renewing

of

of his paſt grief, and would for a conſiderable time damp the pleaſures he before my coming did enjoy in his ſolitude; ſince now he again has had the comfort to converſe with one of his dear countrymen, after full fifty years being ſevered from human ſociety. The height of his grief having for ſome moments ſtopped the utterance of his words, he ſighing laid his head upon my neck, ſqueezing me cloſe in his arms.

This moſt tender and moving action moved me to a reciprocal grief: Never did any man reflect with more reluctancy than when I parted with that good old man, who having recovered in ſome meaſure his former firmneſs of mind, his ſoul being again reſigned, we repeated our embraces with a mutual affection. Then I took my leave; but he would not part with me there; he would by all means wait on me to the lake I was to wade over to come at the rock, on the other ſide of which the boat waited for me: And when I came thither, he would alſo have waded over with me, that he might have the ſatisfaction of ſeeing me ſafe from the dangerous rock; but I would in no-wiſe permit him. Thus having prevailed upon him to ſtay behind, I prepared to wade over: So after a few more embraces, I croſſed the lake, and came to my impatient companions, who received me with heavy reprimands for truſting myſelf ſo long alone with that necromancer; for nothing, ſaid they, ſhall ever perſuade me a man can have ſuch plenty of dainties with only the help of nature: No, no, he may talk of providence as much as he pleaſes; he applies to the black art; and thoſe voices he calls echoes are his inviſible imps, which (if truth be known) are often employed in raiſing the wind, and cauſing ſtorms, which render theſe ſeas often ſo dangerous: And it has been obſerved,

obſerved, that few or no ſhips come near thoſe rocks, and eſcape being ſtaved. For my part, I aſſure you I don't think myſelf ſafe, whilſt within the reach of his enchantments. With that he takes one of the oars out of young Tim's hand, and falls to rowing. Indeed, ſaid Tim, as you ſay, he looked very much like a conjurer with his long hair and beard; and I believe he is conjuring now. See, here is bad weather coming; let us make haſte from theſe rocks.

Even as he ſaid, in ſhort, ſo it happened; for in a little time after the wind roſe, and the ſea began to be a little rough; ſo that I was forced to take the hitcher, and with it keep the boat from the rocks, whither the waves very often drove us; but, ſtanding out to ſea, the wind grew more calm, and fair for the continent: I took one of the oars, and, by help of our ſail, in a ſhort time, we got ſafe to ſhore: where being arrived very much fatigued, we put up at the firſt cottage, which was inhabited by an old man and woman, Indians, where we dreſſed our fiſh, and went to ſupper; which was ſcarce over, but I was hurried on board, the wind being tacked about, and fair for our departure.

We weighed anchor on the ſeventeenth day of May, 1724, and ſtood out to ſea, and ſailed ſouth and by eaſt till we arrived on the 26th at Panama on Terra Firma, after meeting with ſome ſtormy weather. Here we began to traffick, in our way home, for ſome corn, neceſſary for our following voyage; as alſo cotton, ſome metals, roſin, gums, and pepper. Our ſtay was not long here; for we ſailed from thence on the fifth of June, the wind being then very favourable: But we had not ſailed above twenty leagues, when we met with a violent ſtorm, which laſted ſome hours, and the wind blowing hard at north north-eaſt; wherein we

we had the misfortune to loſe our ſurgeon, one John Davis, who, being imprudently upon deck, was waſhed overboard by a prodigious wave coming in at the fore-caſtle: Our ſhip received no damage in that ſtorm; but our loſs of Mr. Davis was very great, and worſe than if any other man on board had been miſſing; for we might alſo call him our chaplain, as well as ſurgeon: And by his exemplary pious life, during the time he belonged to our ſhip, he might really be called a divine. He was a man, who, as he told me, had been educated at Hart-hall, Oxon, in his early days, and deſigned for the ſacred robe: but his genius very much inclining to thoſe moſt pleaſant ſtudies, *viz* phyſic and ſurgery, he afterwards made them his practice; but meeting with ſome misfortunes, about the 35th year of his life, he left England in the year 1711, and embarked on board the John and Mary for New-England, where he lived till the year 1723, when our ſhip arrived at that country, at that time wanting a ſurgeon; for our own died juſt at our approach near the continent. Our captain, on inquiry, having an excellent character of Mr. Davis, agreed with him for our voyage till we returned back thither again. I think it but juſt to eternize his memory in theſe memoirs, and give him the character which he merited.

He was a pious good man, ſober, juſt, and virtuous; ready to ſerve, but never to offend any man. His morals were inſtructive to all thoſe who knew him, and his conſtant exhortation (while on board our ſhip) to frequent daily prayers, was the reaſon that we eſteemed him the doctor of our ſouls, as well as a ſurgeon to our bodies. Nay, which is ſtill more, while he was with us, though he never entered into ſacred orders, yet he told us, he thought it

his

his duty to give us the beſt inſtructions he was capable of, for the preſervation of our ſouls and bodies, both which were always in danger: And accordingly, after divine ſervice (as I may call it) was performed by him in a very ſolemn manner, he would frequently diſcourſe on the nature and heinouſneſs of the ſin of man, which occaſioned the ſufferings of Chriſt; on the terrors of hell, and the joys of heaven; as alſo on the glorious creation of the world, ſetting forth the works of Omnipotence in very lively colours, telling the advantage, pleaſure, and beauty, that attended a godly life. Sometimes his diſcourſes would be on natural philoſophy, which were extremely well delivered: At other times on ſome of the ſciences, moſt of which he well underſtood, and to which we gave very great attention, as being deſirous of ſuch uſeful knowledge: In ſhort, his death was greatly lamented by the captain as well as myſelf, and indeed by all the ſhip's crew; for he was a man of a quick thought, and lively apprehenſion; had an univerſal knowledge in things, intirely free from reſervedneſs, but of perfect humility and condeſcenſion; moſt agreeably entertaining in his converſation, and dear to all that ever knew him.

Thus, having given an imperfect character of that great man, to whoſe memory I owe ſo much, I ſhall proceed to a further deſcription of our voyage. As to the coaſts on thoſe ſeas, I think it needleſs to make any mention thereof, they having been ſo well deſcribed already by our modern geographers, nor is it any-wiſe uſeful to my purpoſe; ſo that I ſhall intirely omit it, and only give an account of the places where we traded or touched at for freſh proviſion or neceſſaries, and remark what happened moſt worthy our notice in our voyage home to England.

The

The weather now proving more favourable, I began to peruſe the memorials of my good old hermit: But oh! with what moving ſympathy did I ſhare with him in the multitude of his misfortunes during his minor years! Nor could I leſs ſympathize with him in the ecſtaſies of his hermetical life. I read with pleaſure and amazement what he had laborioufly tranſcribed, being at that time doubtful whether it would ever be peruſed by any mortal; where he ſet forth a continued ſeries of misfortunes, as if linked together by divine providence (whilſt he lived in the wiſe world, as he called it): And in this account, during his abode on that deſolate iſland, denotes that the omnipotent being had always an immediate direction in every circumſtance or point of time. I was more and more aſtoniſhed and amazed by this good man's precepts, who has abandoned the world, content to live in a deſolate and loneſome iſland, uninhabited by any mortal but himſelf; where he has had the ſpace of fifty years to reflect and contemplate on the follies and misfortunes of man; during which time his maxims were always his rule of life in every caſe. O! may I once more ſee that dear old man, whoſe habitation is free from all anxious cares, from oppreſſion and uſury, and all the evils that attend this populous world! There would I abide, and never depart from that happy ſolitude, which he ſo peaceably enjoys—But whither am I running? Theſe contemplations have made me forget the remarks of my voyage.

We ſailed from Panama on the 6th day of June, and had frequent thunder and lightning, attended with ſome rain; but nothing elſe extraordinary happened. On the 15th we made Gorgona Bay in Peru, where our boat went on ſhore to a village on the main,

main, with twenty hands well arm'd, reſolving to get ſome freſh proviſions at any rate; for we began to be in want, having taken in but very little at Panama. It is a low land, full of mangrove trees, and, within land, pretty high: The village was but poor; however, they brought away ſix hogs and four goats; ſome limes, and plantanes. Not far from thence are ſome gold mines, but of no great note, as we were informed by ſome Indians. They are a very warlike people who live on that coaſt, and often engage one another with clubs and darts, made of hard wood. The iſland is about ſix leagues in length. There are monkeys, lizards, hares, and Guiney pigs; alſo ſeveral ſorts of ſnakes, ſome of which are as big as one's leg; ſo that it is dangerous to walk in ſome parts of the iſland. One of our men happened to be bit by one, and did not live above ſix hours after; though his death had been prevented, I believe, had we not met with that misfortune of loſing Mr. Davis, our ſurgeon. Here, alſo, we caught ſome mullets, and ſeveral ſorts of fiſh extremely good, though unknown to us as to their names. In this iſland there is a creature which the Indians call a Mundago, but the Spaniards a Sloth, which I think is its propereſt name; for it is a creature which ſeems to ſleep as it walks, by its ſlow motion: And it is reported, that it eats the leaves of trees, which are its only food; but it is ſo prodigious lazy, that when it has cleared one tree of its leaves, it will be almoſt ſtarved to death before it attempts to climb another: In ſhort, it is a very ugly creature, and ſeems to be of the monkey kind by its make; but its hair is thicker and longer, nor is it ſo agreeable to look at, and is different in its nature. Here we alſo got freſh water, and wood; for their are very good brooks

brooks on that iſland, and wood enough. While we lay near the iſland, I went aſhore; and, in my converſation with a Spaniard, he related to me the following account of one Thomas Jenkins, a Lancaſhire man, who was boatſwain on board a merchant's ſhip, whoſe name I have ſince forgot, who was left on that iſland, and lived alone there two years and three months; but was firſt ſeen on that iſland by ſome Indians who came from the main for oyſters, and other ſhell-fiſh, which they frequently gather for the Spaniards. He made his eſcape from them, and hid himſelf in the woods; fearing that they would carry him to the Spaniards; and, by that means, he might be made a ſlave; chuſing rather ſolitude, than to enter into bondage for his life. However, an Engliſh ſhip trading on that coaſt, had notice of it from the Indians; and, imagining that he might be an Engliſhman caſt away, or ſet on ſhore there (as he really was) by ſome pirate who had been in thoſe ſeas, they ſent their boat, with ſix hands, to the iſland in ſearch of him. They took their ſpeaking trumpet with them, and, by that means, after about ſix hours ſtay on the iſland, they found him out. He told them, that, at his firſt being ſet on ſhore upon the iſland, it ſeemed very melancholy and frightful; when he began to reflect on the barbarity of the pirates, to leave him there without proviſions, or any manner of neceſſaries whereby he might ſupport himſelf (they leaving him only his wearing cloaths, and his pocket-knife). If they had left him any fire arms and ammunition, his caſe would not have been near ſo deſperate; becauſe he then might have not only defended himſelf againſt any enemy, but likewiſe have killed ſome goats, or fowls, for his ſubſiſtence.) He alſo ſaid, that what made him

very melancholy, was, to think his habitation, and place of abode, was where he could have no human ſociety, and in an iſland that he, at firſt, knew not whether there was any thing on it for his ſubſiſtence, as never being on that coaſt before. But the ſecond day of his being there, he took a ſurvey of the iſland, and found, that there were monkeys, goats, &c. and alſo good fiſh. He dreaded greatly the ſnakes, which were larger than he had ever ſeen before; however, as they endeavoured to get from him, he reſted pretty well ſatisfied; hoping there was no beaſt of prey to hurt him there; for fear of which, at firſt, he climbed up into a pimento-tree to ſleep. He was well pleaſed to find ſuch good ſhell-fiſh, which was the only food he lived on for the firſt five days; when, by accident, he caught a young kid, which very much rejoiced him: But he was at a great loſs for fire to dreſs it; till, having nothing to employ himſelf with, but thinking he remembered that he had heard, that the rubbing of two pieces of wood hard together produced fire, he tried the experiment: And, by rubbing two pieces of pimento wood together, did produce fire (after the mannner the Indians make uſe of it.) He then made a fire, as having wood enough, and broiled part of his goat which was a delicious meal to him. He afterwards began to build himſelf a hut to dwell in, where he lived and dreſſed his fiſh and goat's fleſh; but could at firſt only broil it, till he had driven two ſtakes into the ground, where he roaſted it, with a wooden ſpit. As to freſh water, as I obſerved before, there were very good brooks in the valleys. At length he invented a way, by thickets, to enſnare a goat ſometimes, which furniſhed him with fleſh. Here were cabbage-trees, which furniſhed him

him with ſauce to his meat, it being very agreeable, when ſeaſoned with the fruit of the Pimento tree, which is much like Jamaica pepper: But afterwards he could run a goat down. Sometimes he had the good luck to find ſome eggs; for there were very good fowls: He caught ſome young teal alſo; and, by cutting their wings, and keeping them always cut, he preſerved them in a brook, juſt by his hut, which he had encloſed. There they bred, and were tame. But being one day gone a pretty diſtance from his hut, a great number of monkeys finding them out, and that they could not fly away, deſtroyed them all. His clothes were almoſt worn out, nay, his ſhoes were quite gone, and had been for ſome time; but, to preſerve his feet, he cut the goat ſkins in the ſhape of ſtockings, and ſewed them or laced them up with thongs of the ſame; and alſo laced the foot-part, making holes with his knife for the thongs, three or four times doubled together, to ſerve for ſoals. The Spaniards told me that he was ſo well inured to that way of life, when he was taken from the iſland, that it was a conſiderable time before he could reliſh either drink, or any kind of victuals, which was dreſſed on board the ſhip. I gave the Spaniard an account of the Hermit, to which he gave very great attention.

So, having refreſhed ourſelves, we ſailed from hence, after a ſtay of three days, only in the bay; having got a pretty many goats from the iſland, and ſome maize or Indian corn. From thence we ſteered for the Gallapago iſlands, but, in our paſſage, met with ſeveral ſtorms and tornadoes, attended with very great rains. Some of our men began to be very ſickly, which we thought proceeded from their eating the livers of ſome young ſeals they had caught, they be-

ing unhealthy. After about three days ſail, we met with frequent calms. During this voyage, one of our Negro women, of which we had three on board, being with child, and near her time, was delivered of a fine boy, which was of a ſwarthy colour. She had been on board us ever ſince we came from the Brazils, and proved very uſeful in waſhing our linen, &c. but Juno, for that was her name, proved with child by one of our men, whoſe name was Thomas Higgins; I, with the help of the other two Negro women which were on board, performed the office of a midwife, and delivered her. I had purchaſed a little wine at Panama, which proved very uſeful to mull for Juno, to comfort her in that condition; alſo the other Negro woman, Tom Higgins, and I, drank one bottle, after her delivery; and we were really merry on that occaſion. The captain was ſomewhat diſpleaſed at this accident; but being unwilling (in ſo long a voyage, attended with ſo many difficulties as we had met with) to inflict too heavy puniſhments on his men, he only obliged Tom to agree that he ſhould allow Juno two piſtoles, when ſhe went aſhore at Brazil, to take care of the child. Tom readily agreed thereto, but had ſome remorſe of conſcience, and began to reflect; and was really very much concerned to think, that the child got by him, (tho' on a Negro, yet ſhe was a woman, and the child in likeneſs of himſelf, and firmly believing that it was really begot by him, and no other perſon) ſhould be bred up in Paganiſm. Accordingly he grew very dull and melancholy at the thoughts thereof, which he communicated to me, aſking my advice about it. So I perſuaded him to be merry, and not caſt himſelf down; for that many ſuch accidents had happened in the Weſt Indies, before then, among the Engliſh-

men,

men, who never thought much of it afterwards. However this had no effect at all on him. He told me, that whatever crimes other people had been guilty of, he could not reconcile himſelf thereunto. Finding him ſo very uneaſy, I acquainted the captain of it: Ah! ſays he, is Tom under ſo great a concern about the child's being not to be educated in the chriſtian religion? Yes, Sir, ſaid I; and I am apprehenſive that it will grow upon him very much to his prejudice, he is ſo extremely concerned about it: For leſs things than that, I have known people grow melancholy (as he ſeems to be); and they have entered into a ſtate of lunacy, and never could be brought to their former reaſon, but have laid violent hands on themſelves. As he is a very honeſt, good-natured fellow (ſetting aſide this ſlip) ſaid I, I wiſh ſome expedient could be found out to make him eaſy. Well, then, Mr. Dorrington, ſays the captain, we have the common-prayer-book on board; and 'tis a pity we loſt poor John Davis, our ſurgeon and chaplain: He could have chriſtened the child, and that would have ſatisfied Tom. O, Sir, ſaid I, with your leave, as we have no chaplain belonging to the ſhip, now Mr. Davis is dead; yet, as we are tolerated to bury our dead, pray why may we not chriſten the living, alſo? It can be no crime to do a good action. The captain approved of what I ſaid; ſo I told him, with his leave, I would be chaplain, in that caſe, as well as I had been man-midwife before; But, Sir, ſaid I, there is an obſtacle that will hinder us ſtill. He aſked me what that was? Why, Sir, ſaid I, we have neither godfathers nor godmothers; and you know that it is not accounted lawful to perform that ceremony, which is one of the ſacraments, unleſs it be done with order and decency, as the church directs. To which the captain replied, Is

there not Mr. Clark, our lieutenant? I and he will ſtand godfathers; and he ſhall, as he is Clark by name, perform the office of clerk in the ceremony. But, Sir, ſaid I, what muſt we do for a godmother? You know there ought to be one, and we have no woman on board that is a chriſtian. Well, then, ſaid the captain, the women we have on board, by a little perſuaſion, may be willing to be chriſtened themſelves; and, if they conſent, they are of age, and therefore capable of anſwering for themſelves, by which means they may become godmothers on occaſion, to the child. So, accordingly, the captain called for a bottle of wine, and ſent for Diana, one of the Negro women, aged about twenty three years. When ſhe came into the cabin, the captain filled a glaſs of wine, and gave it her: After ſhe had drank it, the captain ſaid, ſo, Diana, 'tis to be hoped that you won't be troubled with the wantons, and play the trick your ſiſter Juno did. Pray, how does the child do? To which ſhe anſwered, it be ver well, but it cry, cry, ver muſh, great deal. Well, ſays the captain; but, Diana, I ſent for you on another occaſion: Do you not remember Mr. Davis, our ſurgeon and chaplain? Yes, ſays ſhe, me ver well know him; he gave me ver gret goot ſtuff (meaning a dram): But, ſays the captain, you know, Diana, he was a very good man and uſed to tell you your duty, and teach you how to ſay your prayers. Yes, ſays ſhe, me ver well remember dat he be ver goot man. Why, then, ſaid the captain, Diana, what do you think of being made a chriſtian, and chriſtened as we chriſtians are? Me mak chriſtian (ſays ſhe) hou! Why, ſays the captain, you know Mr. Davis taught you to read, and you learned to ſay your prayers: They are very good prayers, are they not? to pray to God. Yes, ſays ſhe; they be ver goot prayer; me

me love dem ver gret muſh. Well, then, ſays the captain, are you willing to be good, and do as thoſe prayers learn you to do? Yes, ſaid ſhe, me be always ver goot, me be ver glad, me lern me prayer, me lern more, me tank you. So, by the captain's advice, I read the publick baptiſm of thoſe of riper years, and baptiſed her; ſhe anſwering to the queſtions by the inſtruction of the captain; and we chriſtened her by the name of Elizabeth, which was the name of our ſhip. As ſoon as the ceremony was over, the captain ordered Elizabeth to dreſs the child in as decent a manner as ſhe could, and bring it to his cabin: In the mean time we drank the bottle of wine. As ſoon as the child was dreſſed, Elizabeth carried it to the captain, who ſent for Thomas Higgins, and told him that Diana was chriſtened, and that he himſelf and the lieutenant were to ſtand godfathers to his ſon, and Elizabeth godmother; and that it was to be chriſtened; and deſired to know what name ſhould be given to the child: To which he anſwered, his own, viz. Thomas. But I never ſaw ſuch an alteration in any man in my life, as I immediately obſerved in him. So ſuddenly it appeared, that it ſurprized us all. For he, who before was dejected, even to the greateſt degree imaginable, now appeared fully ſatisfied in his mind; and conſcience no longer ſeemed to fly in his face; but he became full of mirth and jollity. So, by the captain's order, I chriſtened the child in a very decent manner; the captain and lieutenant ſtood godfathers, and Elizabeth ſtood godmother. When the ceremony was over, the captain ſaid, Tom, as this child was begot and born on board my ſhip, and I am its godfather; and as it is now a chriſtian; I think it properly belongs to me (though I am not the father of it) to ſee it brought up in a chriſtian manner, which, if it

pleaſe God to bleſs me with life, I will ſee performed; and not only that, but will take care of it, if it lives, during my life; and ſee it well educated. So the captain ordered half a goat to be roaſted; and he, the lieutenant and I, with Tom and Elizabeth, whom he permitted on that occaſion, ſupped at his table, and were very merry: Which ſo rejoiced Elizabeth, that ſhe, immediately after ſupper, related what had happened to her fellow Negro woman, who was called Antiope: and they both went to Juno, and told her, that her ſon was baptized by the name of Thomas.

The weather here was extremely hot in the day-time; but there were cold dews at night, which were very dangerous; for three of our men died in our voyage to the Galliapagoes.

As we ſailed, on the twenty-fifth at night, the ſea very much ſurprized us, it ſeeming to be as red as blood; which occaſioned Stephen Jones, who was upon the watch, with ſome others to call us up; for they had never ſeen the like before. When we came upon deck, we ſuppoſed it to be a great quantity of the ſpawn of fiſh ſwimming on the water; it being very fair. Having paſſed the line, we made the Galliapagoes on the fifth of July, where we anchored about a mile off the ſhore, in a good ſmooth ſandy ground. We ſent our boat aſhore for water, but could find none. Some of our men began to be ſick, but none of them died before we arrived at Puna iſle, in Peru; from whence we ſailed a little way up the river Guiaquil, where we ſaw a great many Alligators, and ſold ſome of our goods: But the Spaniards being jealous that we came as ſpies, and belonged to ſome other ſhips on that coaſt, which were Buccaniers, we thought it beſt to leave that place, having taken in ſome freſh water, and a few proviſions, to

ſerve

ſerve us to the iſle of Labos. We ſtood out to ſea, and made the iſland of St. Clara, where we anchored on the tenth for that night (our ſhip proving crank, and ſailing very heavy): The next morning, when we were preparing to ſail, we found that our ſhip had ſprung a leak; ſo that we were obliged to have one hand at the pump continually. Before we had ſailed ſix leagues, the wind freſhened upon us, and the ſky looked extraordinary black at north eaſt, and it moved towards us, which made us take in our topſails; and afterwards we reev'd our mainſail and mizen; at which time it began to rain, and poured down as if thro' a ſieve. The ſea ſeemed as if it had been all on fire, by the prodigious thunder and lightning. It then being night, the elements over head looked moſt diſmally black, but all round the horizon was as red as blood: The waves which ſeemed to daſh againſt the clouds, by the violence of the wind, ſparkled like lightning, which, together with the thunder, made a terrible noiſe; at laſt breaking in upon our deck, it carried away one of our anchors; and we durſt not bring our ſhip to the wind for fear of her foundering: it being dangerous, in a ſtorm, to turn a ſhip backward and forward; ſo we were obliged to lie in the trough of the ſea. But the wind and rain abating, we obſerved, to our great joy, a Corpus Sanct at the top of our ſpindle: Theſe Corpus Sancts are good ſigns, when ſeen aloft; but bad omens and denote a great ſtorm, when ſeen on the decks. It is a ſmall glimmering light, like a ſtar, when aloft; but when on the deck, it appears like a glow worm. It is the opinion of mariners, that it is a ſort of jelly, incorporated by the wind, rain, ſea vapours, and air; becauſe it is never obſerved unleſs in ſtormy weather.

We ſailed right before the wind, which was ſouth-weſt, but were obliged to keep continually pumping till the eighteenth day; when we made the iſle of Labos, about twelve at noon. That night we got ſafe into the harbour, and anchored, at twenty fathoms water, in clean ground, between the two iſlands: Here we reſolved to careen our ſhip. Accordingly, obſerving the time of high water, we put her into a cove, in the ſouthermoſt iſland, where we hauled her up as far as we could on the land; and our carpenter and all hands ſet to work the next day. This iſland is barren, and without freſh water. Here we killed ſeveral ſeals, ſea-lions boobies, and penguins; a ſea-fowl about as big as a duck, whoſe fleſh is very ordinary food, but the eggs exceeding good: Here, alſo, we found a ſmall black fowl, which makes holes in the ground to rooſt in at night, whoſe fleſh is very good; and a great many vultures and crows. We had careened our ſhips, and were in readineſs to ſail on the twenty-ſixth, and ſailed to the iſland Fernandos, and made the middle bay on the ſeventh of Auguſt, winter being juſt over there; which continues only for two months, *viz.* June and July. We have verbal accounts here of ſeveral men who have been left, or caſt away, and have lived ſome time, and very well, on this iſland. Here we mended our ſails. There is plenty of very good fiſh of divers ſorts. It is very pleaſant on the ſhore, and very healthy; ſo that the men who had been ill on our voyage, perfectly recovered their healths; for the green pimento trees diffuſed a very agreeable and refreſhing healthy ſmell all over the iſland. Here we ſpent ſome time in taking wood on board, and likewiſe in laying water up, which here is very good; we alſo boiled a conſiderable number of ſea-lions, of which there are plenty here:

here: We had, alſo, plenty of young ſeals, which eat very well; only their livers are unwholeſome: And at the ſouth end of the iſland we found ſome goats of which we killed about thirty, which were excellent good. Here were alſo plenty of turnips and water-creſſes, which were of great ſervice to us in curing the ſcurvy; of which we gathered a very large quantity.

So, having refreſhed ourſelves very well on this iſland, we reſolved to ſteer for Cape Verde in Chili; on the twelfth, made the iſland of St Jago, where we anchored, and ſent our boat on ſhore. Here we bought ſome hogs, and black cattle (for our voyage round Cape Horn to the Brazils); as alſo, ſome corn and maize. Here the people, from the ill uſage they had formerly met with from the French, are extremely ſharp, and really diſhoneſt: for if they trade with you, and can't get the advantage of you which they think you would have of them, they will ſnatch your goods, and run away with them.

We weighed anchor on the twentieth, and ſailed from hence round Cape Horn, in 51 degrees 15 minutes lat. as our pilot informed me, I being only a merchant on board, and therefore do not pretend to make a methodical journal, only as I promiſed to give an account of the moſt material paſſages in our voyage home. Round the Cape the weather favoured us extremely, and nothing happened that was material, only that we were chaſed by a pirate ſhip for about twelve hours, on the twenty-ninth; but the night coming on, it favoured us ſo that we loſt her. On the fourth of September we made Faukland's iſland. Here we ſaw a great number of porpuſes, which often leaped out of the water, of an uncommon ſort. On the fifth we had the misfortune to have one of our men fall into the ſea, as he was throwing the lead;

and he was drowned before we could give him any help. We had very brisk gales at south-west. We sailed, and made Cape St. Antonio, near the mouth of the river de la Plata, in Paragua, on the twenty-fifth, the wind south by west; when we stood out to sea, and made the isle of Grande, on the coast of Brazil, on the twenty-ninth. We got a pilot, who conducted us into the watering-cove, at the inner westermost point of the island. In sounding as we went in, we hardly met, in any place, with less than ten fathoms water. The island is about nine leagues long, high land near the water-side: It abounds with wood, has monkeys, and other wild beasts; plenty of good timber, and fresh water, oranges and lemons. We had pleasant weather, but extremely hot. We here received a letter from our owners, commanding us home, and not to sail for New England, as designed. Here we got beef, mutton, hogs, fowls, sugar, rum, oranges, and lemons (so that now we did not want good punch). During our voyage from the Galliapagoes, I applied myself to the perusal of my good old man's memoirs, which I took very great delight in; and finding the whole series of his minor years attended with such a number of unaccoutable accidents, hardly to be paralleled, I thought proper, as I designed them to be published at my arrival in England, to digest them in a more regular manner than I found them wrote in his manuscript; but neither added nor diminished; nor did I in the least vary from what he himself had wrote, as to the accidents of life; only I made some amendments which I thought necessary: For his absence from England so long as fifty years, had occasioned him, in some manner, not to be well acquainted with the language as it is now spoken, and (by his living without any conversation so long a time) had made him,

him, in ſome meaſure, forget his own mother-tongue. Though I really think, taking that into conſideration, that his account was very polite; yet, had his life been publiſhed, as in his memoirs, it would have appeared very obſolete, and difficult to be read, though ever ſo entertaining. I accordingly collected all the paſſages of his firſt twenty-eight years together, and thought proper to make a book, or part by themſelves, that part of his life being different from his hermetical confinement on the iſland, which at firſt ſight appeared ſo full of horror, and nothing but a proſpect of the moſt miſerable condition that could befal him. He no ſooner look'd round him, and, depending upon Providence, as a ſupporter of the diſtreſs'd, but he found almoſt every thing neceſſary for human life on that ſmall iſland; and he, who then thought of nothing but immediately periſhing in the moſt miſerable condition, has lived, by the help of divine providence, in a ſafe and plentiful manner; and is now ſo inur'd thereunto, that he deſpiſes the populous world and its vanities: he alſo conſiders its pompous glory to be of no more ſubſtance than a ſhadow; and that there is no felicity on earth, unleſs in ſolitude.

I likewiſe methodized his account, during his reſidence on the Iſland, in the former manner; and made another book, or part; which with this account of my finding him on the Iſland, and my conference with him, compleats my deſign: ſo that it can't be called an imperfect deſcription, but complete, in three books. So I return to my voyage.

In our voyage from Juan Fernandes we ſaw a very large bird, which is called an Alcatres: theſe birds ſpread their wings from eight to ten feet wide. In the Brazils is a ſerpent call'd Liboya, or the Roebuck Serpent, the report of which is incredible (in my opinion

opinion) but affirmed by ſome of the Portugueſe; *viz.* that there are ſame of them thirty feet long, its body being as big as an hogſhead, and deſtroys a roe-buck at one meal. Here we trafficked for ſeveral ſorts of drugs. We treated the Portugueſe very civilly, who ſupplied us with all things neceſſary for our uſe. During our ſtay here, there arrived a brigantine laden with negroes for the golden mines. here four of our men died, and three ran away from us, the laſt of which we had juſt occaſion to be thankful for, rather than ſorry; for Timothy Anchors over-heard them diſcourſing, that they deſigned to mutiny at our next ſailing, but was doubtful whether or no they might get enough on their ſide to over-power the captain, and his party; and agreeing, among themſelves, that it was a very difficult matter to become maſters of the ſhip: and, beſides, conſidering the hazard they run, in being puniſhed, after ſuch a ſevere manner as they ſhould be, if found out by any means, before they could accompliſh their deſign, or if they ſhould fail in their attempt; made them rather chuſe to deſert the ſhip, than continue any longer. Though our captain was an extraordinary good man, yet rogues will be always employing their wicked thoughts; and neither clemency nor good uſage can make them perform their duty in their ſtations.

The tenth of October, after having ſet Antiope, one of our negro women, on ſhore, who refuſed to be chriſtened as Diana was, we began to ſail, but kept Elizabeth and Juno on board; the captain reſolving that ſhe ſhould live with him as his ſervant, and by that means would bring up Tom's child: we did not meet with any thing very remarkable; but after about twenty-four hours eaſy ſail, we paſs'd the tropick, and the next day ſaw land. We ſtood from it ſouth ſouth-weſt,

weſt, and had cloſe cloudy weather all night, with ſhowers of rain. When day broke, we ſaw Aſcenſion iſland, at about a league's diſtance; and about nine o'clock we came to an anchor. The ſea is here very deep. The next day we weighed anchor, and ſailing north north-eaſt, till the ſeventeenth, with a freſh gale at weſt, ſouth-weſt, we croſſed the line. The next day an ugly accident happened; for we brought a young bear from Mexico; and our men being often uſed to play with her and teaze her, it proved very fatal to one Thad Obrian, an Iriſh boy, of about ſixteen years of age, who had been fretting the creature with a ſmall rope, which he made a nooſe to, and ſlipped her hind leg into it, and ſo worried her. Her blood growing warm, and ſhe being enraged at his hunting her to-and-fro on the deck, where he happened to ſlip down: the bear immediately ſeized poor Thady by the neck, with ſuch violence, that, before any body could deliver him from her paws, the poor boy's throat was tore to-pieces; ſo that he died inſtantly.

We ſailed but very ſlowly now, meeting with continual calms, and directed our courſe for Cape Verde iſlands; but on the twenty-ſixth we had a heavy tornado, attended with lightning, which fell as if the element had been on fire; but it continued only for a ſhort time; afterwards the weather proved extreamly fair, the wind being full ſouth. A ſailor going up to furl the main topgallant on the third of November, in the morning, ſaw land, and ſuppoſed it to be one of Cape Verde iſlands, bearing north-eaſt, diſtant about ſeven leagues, ſmooth water, and freſh gales: about four o'clock we bore north north-weſt, and went with an eaſy ſail till day-light, and made the iſland of St. Vincent; when, about nine o'clock, we anchored in the bay, in about five fathoms water, where

where we rode till the next day; and then we went to St. Nicholas, another, and one of the largeſt of the Cape Verde iſlands. Theſe iſlands are ſo called from Cape Verde in Africa, and are moſtly inhabited by Portugueſe. One of them is called Sall: it derives its name from the prodigious quantity of ſalt which is naturally congealed in ſalt-ponds. There are ſome poor goats on this iſland, and ſome wild fowls. Here are flamingoes, a large fowl much like an heron, but bigger, and of a reddiſh colour: they feed together in muddy ponds, or where there is but little water. They are hard to ſhoot, being very ſhy.

In St. Nicholas we traded with ſome of the Spaniards for ambergreaſe; but they were very fradulent, having counterfeited it much. Here are ſome vineyards and plantations, belongingto the Portugueſe; and wine, much like Madera, of a pale colour alſo, and thick. The people are ſwarthy, and the inhabitants live ſcattering in the valleys.

While we were at this iſland, we ſcrubbed our ſhip's bottom, and dug ſome wells on the ſhore, where we got freſh water. Here an ugly accident had like to have happened: for one of our men, going down into the hold with a candle, ſet fire to a bale of cotton, which, by his careleſſneſs, had like to have been the loſs of our ſhip: but, (thanks to God) it was diſcovered, by its ſmother, juſt before it began to blaze out; ſo that by immediate help, we got it extinguiſhed. Very ſoon after we hoiſted it upon deck, for fear any of the fire ſhould remain, and revive again; and becauſe we would have it in mind for our ſafety.

On the eighth we went to the iſle of Mayo, another of Cape Verde iſlands, but made no ſtay. We ſaw at ſouth-weſt, the iſland del Fogo, which is remarkable for being a vulcano, or burning mountain, out of which

which iſſue flames of fire; but they are only diſcerned in the night, and then are ſeen a great way at ſea: yet there are inhabitants on this iſland (as I have been informed by the Portugueſe of the iſland of St. Nicholas) who live at the foot of the mountain, near the ſea. There are alſo cocoa-nuts, plantanes, goats and fowls.

In the iſland of St. Aritanio, another of the Cape Verde iſlands, there is a very large ſpider (as I was informed by the ſame Portuguſe) which weaves its web between the trees; and it is ſo ſtrong, that it is difficult for a man to get through. Here are alſo wild aſſes; likewiſe ſalt-pits, where great quantities of ſalt are naturally made by the ſun's heat; with which they load yearly ſeveral ſhips, and are able to ſell much greater quantities than they do, if they had but vent for it.

Having diſpatched our affairs at the Cape Verde iſlands, we weighed with the flood, having a ſmall gale at ſouth ſouth-weſt: On the ſeventeenth it began to blow, and veered to the ſouth-weſt by ſouth. That evening we ſaw three ſail of ſhips at weſt north-weſt, bearing as we ſuppoſed, for the Canary iſlands, as well as ourſelves. The night coming on, which was extreamly clear and fine, we paſſed the tropick about the break of day; ſoon after which we obſerved a north bank lying in the horizon. We then provided for a ſtorm, which thoſe clouds denote. The wind was at north-weſt. We brought the ſhip under our main-ſail and mizen only, and ballaſted our mizen; but yet the wind and ſeas were too high for us, and every wave ſeemingly threatned to overwhelm us; ſo that we beat up and down with only our bare poles, which we feared would break in upon our deck, which muſt have foundered us, in caſe it had ſo happened:

pened: we alſo lowered our main-yard, and fore-yard down a port-laſt, as I obſerved the ſailors called it, that is, pretty near the deck; and the wind blew ſo extremely fierce, that we did not dare to looſe any head-ſail at all: for, if we had, they certainly would have been blown away. During the ſtorm, it rained exceeding faſt, which continued for about four hours, when it changed, and was pretty calm; and we began to get every thing in good order. The wind that evening, changing to ſouth-weſt, about ſix the next evening. we ſaw the pike of Teneriff, at about nine leagues diſtance. We ſaw ſome flying-fiſh and a great deal of ſea-thiſtle ſwimming. We ſailed all night with a ſmall eaſy gale, and at break of day made the Canaries; bearing at north-weſt by weſt, about three leagues. We crouded all our ſail, and came to an anchor, in the harbour of Sancta Cruz, in the iſland of Teneriff, on the twenty-firſt, about three fathoms warer, black ſlimy ground, in about half a mile from the ſhore. The land being for the moſt part pretty high, 'tis very bad going aſhore here in boats; and ſhips riding here are often forced to put to ſea, or ſlip their anchors, by reaſon the road lies ſo open to the eaſt. Ships are here ſupplied with good water between the coves, where they generally water.

Sancta Cruz, a ſmall town fronting the ſea, has two forts to ſecure the road: here ſome Engliſh merchants reſide. Their houſes are low and uniform, covered with pantiles. Here are oranges, lemons, and other fruits; alſo, flowers, and ſallading; and a great number of pleaſant gardens. At Oratavia the country is ſo full of riſings and fallings, that it is troubleſome to walk up and down in it: mules and aſſes are moſt uſed by them. Here grows the right and true Malmſey wine; here are alſo Canary and Verdona,

Verdona, or green wine: likewiſe a great many convents. Ships are forced to ſlip their cables, perhaps three or four times, by reaſon of the winds, and put to ſea before they can take in all their lading. Here are wheat, barley, maize, beans, peaſe, apples, pears, plumbs, cherries, pomgranates, citrons, oranges, lemons, and ſeveral other fruits, excellently good; alſo horſes, aſſes, mules, cows, goats, hogs, deer and fowl, both tame and wild, in great plenty. Proviſions are dear on the trading iſlands, but cheap on the others.

Fero iſle is very remarkable: it hath no freſh water, only in the middle of the iſland, where there grows a tree; which being continually covered with clouds, from its leaves always drop great quantities of excellent water. Theſe Canary iſlands are commonly the rendezvous of the Spaniſh Weſt-India fleet, where they generally receive orders for unlading their wealth.

From the harbour of Sancta Cruz we ſailed, on the twenty-fifth of November, to the Canary iſlands: here the ſoil is ſo fertile, that they have two harveſts in a year. Its commodities are, honey, wax, ſugar, and the beſt of wines; of which we took in a ſufficient quantity of each: here are alſo, dragon's-tree, which produces a red liquor called dragon's blood. Theſe iſlands are exceeding wholeſome, tho' they are inclinable to heat.

Having taken in the cargo which we deſigned from theſe iſlands, we ſailed from thence on the third of December for the Madera iſland, with a fair wind at ſouth ſouth-weſt, and ſaw ſeveral ſhips ſailing towards the Lizard: The next day at eight in the morning, we made land, which was the Madera, at about four leagues diſtance, and came to an anchor: Here are many fountains and rivers, which refreſh the country. It is a very beautiful iſland, exceeding fertile, and produces

duces excellent wine which is very ſtrong. We anchored in the port; which reſembles an half moon, not far from the town. Near this iſland is another not ſo large as this (which is about ſixty leagues in compaſs) called Porto Sancto, which affords much the ſame commodities as Madera: Here we took in about thirty pipes of Madera wine; and having accompliſhed our buſineſs, we left that iſland on the tenth, and ſailed for the Lizard with a weſterly wind. We had not ſailed above ſix leagues, but it changed to north-eaſt, and the ſky began to be covered with ſmall hard clouds, very thick, one by another, which we imagined an approaching ſtorm: Accordingly we provided for it, by reeving our top ſails, and took in our ſails as faſt as poſſible. The wind began to blow a very briſk gale, and ſoon after the ſtorm began; the wind ſtill increaſed by ſqualls of rain and hail, which came very thick and faſt, and the ſea ran very high; ſo that we were obliged to run before the wind. We ſhipped little or no water, tho' ſome waſhed into our upper deck; and with ſome of the waves a dolphin was caſt thereon. The wind blew very hard, but about eight hours after, it abated its fierceneſs, and then the wind veered to the weſt, and the foûl weather broke up, and we had ſmaller gales, with ſome calms, and fair weather. On the eighteenth the wind veered to ſouth ſouth-eaſt, which continued a briſk gale till the twenty-ninth, and we kept right before wind and ſea, the wind ſtill increaſing; and we made the Lizard on the twenty ſeventh, at about three leagues, and ſtood in for the land, and came to an anchor in King's Road, January 3, 1724-5.

Thus I have given an account of our voyage from Mexico, as I promiſed, which I hope may not be offenſive to any body; it being my intention to divert the readers, rather than diſpleaſe them.

N. B.

N. B. *The ſhip belonged to* Briſtol, *I communicated the following memoirs to a friend in* London, *in order to be publiſhed; which if approved of by the publick, I ſhall at my return, be very well ſatisfied. In the mean time, I have buſineſs calls me to* Peru *and* Mexico *again; in which voyage I hope to ſee poor* Phil. *my good old hermit. And ſo I take my leave, and end the firſt part.*

Briſtol, Nov. 6. 1725.

EDWARD DORRINGTON.

THE

THE ENGLISH HERMIT.

BOOK II.

An ACCOUNT *of the birth and education of* PHILIP QUARLL; *as alſo, the moſt ſurprizing tranſactions of his life, from his infancy to his being caſt away.*

Taken from the memoirs he gave to Mr. Edward Dorrington, *the perſon who found him on the iſland.*

PHILIP QUARLL was born in the pariſh of St. Giles, in the year 1647. His father Thomas Quarll, formerly a maſter builder, having unfortunately ruined himſelf in building was at laſt reduced to work at the laborious and mean buſineſs of brick-making: his poor wife, alſo, was obliged to lay her hand to the labouring oar; ſo went a charing: which ſlaviſh and confining occupation robbed her of the

the neceſſary time to attend the fruit of her conjugal affection, her beloved Phil. ſo that ſhe was obliged (whilſt ſhe and her poor yoke fellow were drudging to get him bread) to commit him to the care of one kind neighbour or another, for a ſmall conſideration till he could prattle, and go alone; at which time ſhe put him to ſchool to a good old almſwoman, where he continued till he was ſix years old.

One day a neighbour who formerly had the care of the child in his mother's abſence, having contracted a particular love for him, being a very pretty child; finding him after ſchool-time ſitting at his father's door, takes him by the hand, and leads him to his mother, then at work at an old lady's houſe in Great Ruſſel-Street.

The houſe-keeper, who was naturally fond of children, ſeeing this pretty child, takes him up in her arms, and runs up to her good old lady who had juſt ended her cuſtomary private devotion.

The child, whom the poor woman kept very neat and clean, beyond what could be expected out of her ſmall gettings, was naturally very handſome; being tall for his age, and well ſhaped; his features regular, and well-proportioned; his complexion fair; his hair long, and curling; his countenance mild, and ſprightly; his behaviour gentle and eaſy: All which qualifications rendered him completely amiable, and made the old lady conceive an inclination for him uncommon for a ſtranger's child eſpecially of ſo mean a birth.

Thus having often kiſſed him, ſhe wiſhed he had been her own. But why, ſaid ſhe, can't I do for this lovely creature, tho' no kin to me by birth? Nature, who has endued him with qualifications ſo proximal and ſuitable to my inclination, has, by ſympathy, made him related to me. His mother gave him birth, which, without prejudice to her own life, ſhe could not

not refuſe; now I'll give him education, the principal and moſt neceſſary care by which real love can be expreſſed to a child.

So, having given orders, that a good ſchool might be inquired after, ſhe put him to board to a maſter, whoſe moſt commendable character of inſtructing his ſcholars, in their duty to God and man, as well as in literature, had procured him a conſiderable number of children of the beſt families. There ſhe intended to have kept him till he was, by years and learning, qualified for ſome genteel trade; intending to leave him in her will, forty pounds, to ſet him up, when out of his time.

But now ill fate begins to ſhew its averſeneſs to poor Phil's happineſs: The worthy lady died ſuddenly, and was interred a few days after, to his unſpeakable prejudice, and threatning ruin. But watchful Providence, who had decreed him good, averted the apparent evil, and only permitted ſome interception to her purpoſes, the better to raiſe his eſteem of her ſucceeding favours, when ſenſible of them.

The maſter having conceived a particular love for the boy (whoſe uncommon docility, and extraordinary aptneſs in learning, had overtaken the reſt of his ſchool-fellows, tho' of a much longer ſtanding) was very much vexed at the thoughts of his going away to his parents, they being no longer able to continue his ſchooling: he was unwilling to part with the boy, and much diſturbed to loſe twelve pounds a year for a boarder. His love for the child, whom he had, in a manner, adopted for his own, would now and-then rouſe ſlumbering charity, whom ſelf-intereſt too often caſts aſleep: Pity, ſaid he, ſuch blooming wiſdom and forward learning ſhould wither away for want of cultivation. Thus having pondered a while, love and charity,

rity, after a long ſtruggle with intereſt, gained the victory: The old man concludes to give him his learning, if his relations would only find him in board and other neceſſaries.

This being concluded upon by both parties, Phil. continued going to ſchool for the ſpace of four years longer; during which time, he made himſelf a complete maſter of the grammar, writing, and arithmetick; he alſo made a vaſt improvement in ſinging, having all that time been taught by a maſter, who attended ſome boarders three times a week; who, finding an extraordinary voice, and natural diſpoſition, in the boy, took a fancy to teach him: So that Phil. was, in ſome reſpects, qualified to attend the ſchool, in the nature of uſher, had his age permitted it. But as he was, as yet, too young to keep the ſcholars in that awe which is neceſſary in a ſchool, the maſter only gave him his board, till the elder ſcholars left off, and he was grown bigger; intending then to allow him ſufficiency to maintain himſelf, as others in that ſtation. But ill fate ſtill attends the poor boy: The good old man died in leſs than a twelvemonth, and was ſucceeded by a ſuperannuated nonconformiſt miniſter; who, having not ſo proſperous a ſchool as his predeceſſor, had no buſineſs for an aſſiſtant: ſo Phil. was a ſecond time obliged to return to his poor mother (his father being dead); who, not being in a capacity to do for him, as his education and natural parts really deſerved, propoſed to him to learn ſome trade, in order to get his bread honeſtly and creditably, when ſhe ſhould be no more able to help him; having, by her hard working, and frugal living, made ſhift to lay up five pounds, which ſhe dedicated to that purpoſe.

Poor Phil. who had conceived a notion that there is a ſervitude and hardſhip entailed upon that ſtation,

was very loth to reſolve upon entering into it; but as he was a very diſcreet boy, not inclined to play, as children commonly are, and ſeeing that there was a neceſſity for him to reſolve upon ſomething; to make his choice the more eaſy, he conſults the maſter's nature and temper, rather than the goodneſs and profitableneſs of the trade: And as there lived in the neighbourhood a lockſmith, ever ſince he was born, who, being great with his father, would often play with him, when a child, and now and then give him farthings to buy fruit; he choſe to be bound to him; which was done in about a month's time.

They both agreed wonderfully well, the maſter being very kind and good-natured, and the man as diligent and careful; ſo that thoſe fears of meeting with hardſhip being diſperſed, he cheerfully worked on, without thinking the time tedious. But this happineſs, though ſlight, is but of a ſhort laſting; for the poor man, having been bound for a relation, who failed, had all his effects ſeized upon, and himſelf thrown into gaol; and poor Phil. in a year's time, was obliged to come to his mother again.

This accident was a vaſt diſappointment to the boy's learning his trade, he being obliged to be idle, his unfortunate maſter begging that he would ſeek after no other; hoping every day to make up his affairs, and carry on buſineſs again: So that the lad, for want of employment, would play about the ſtreets with neighbour's children.

One day, as he was playing at leap-frog with other boys, there happened to go by one James Turner, an houſe-breaker, who taking notice of his activity, which much exceeded the reſt, judged he might be of great uſe to him in the practice of his art. The meanneſs of his dreſs, which ſpoke him of no conſiderable fami-

ly

ly, gave him room to hope that he might eaſily get him: So having ſtopt a while, he took the opportunity, that the boy, being hot with running and jumping, went to drink at a pump hard by. He takes him by the arm, ſaying, Do you mean to kill yourſelf, child, to go and drink cold water now, when you are hot? Come along with me, and I will give thee a draught of good ale: You ſhall only go a ſhort errand for me. Will you, maſter? the innocent boy anſwered; I'll go your errand if it's not too far: So followed him to an alehouſe, in a blind alley, not far from thence, which he commonly uſed. Being come, he calls for a quart, and bids the boy take a hearty pull; which he did, being very dry, and the liquor as pleaſant: This being done a ſecond time, it began to creep into his head, not being uſed to ſtrong drink; and in a little time he fell aſleep on the bench on which he ſat.

The ſeducer, thinking himſelf ſecure of him, leaves him to take his nap, ſhutting the door upon him, and charging the people of the houſe not to awake him, nor let him go away, when awake, till he returned; ſo went to get ready the implements neceſſary to ſet his evil project in execution; having determined to rob a rich merchant that night, in which wicked action he intended to make the harmleſs boy his chief inſtrument, by putting him in at a hole he was to break, and then to open the door for him, under the pretence that it was his uncle, who was ſo ill-natured as to lock him out, if not at home at the ſhop ſhutting-up.

Having got the tools, he returned to the boy, whom he found juſt awake, and very uneaſy to go home, having ſlept till it was dark, being afraid to anger his relations by ſtaying out late, contrary to his cuſtom, being uſed to orderly hours, and would have gone away,

had not Turner, whoſe projects would have been quite unhinged, uſed all the devices he was maſter of to perſuade him. Firſt he beſpeaks a ſupper of that which the boy liked beſt, who ſince his being come from the boarding-ſchool, had been uſed to none but courſe meat, his poor parent's abilities affording no better: Then, to divert away the time he intended to prolong till his opportunity ſuited, he told him ſeveral ſtories, and, moſt particularly, that of his pretended uncle's unkindneſs to lock him out of doors; and of his cunning invention to get in at his own time, and unknown to him; but that he was afraid he muſt be forced to lie out that night, which would be his death, being not uſed to ſuch hardſhip. The poor tender-hearted boy, who could ſcarce forbear crying, whilſt he related this diſmal ſtory of his uncle's unkind uſage, aſked him what was the matter he could not get in that night, as well as at other times? Becauſe, replied the ſly knave, the poor boy that uſed to let me in is ſick of the ſmall pox, as I have heard ſince you fell aſleep. What! can't you get ſomebody elſe? ſaid ſimple Phil. I would do that for you, if I could tell how to get in my own home; for my mother goes to bed betimes, being obliged to get up early. As for that matter, anſwered the ſubtle ſerpent, do not trouble yourſelf; I'll provide a bed for you. Thus having removed both that, and all other obſtacles the boy raiſed, he perſuades him to ſtay.

But ever-watchful providence reſcues his inſnared innocence. Some hours before he was to go about the execution of that evil project, Turner was apprehended for a great robbery he committed the night before in Lime ſtreet; and the boy, being in his company, was alſo carried before a magiſtrate. But the juſtice underſtanding, by the innocent boy's defence, he hard-

ly

ly was yet guilty of any robbery, having regard to his youth, and modeſt countenance, reprimanded him for his eaſineſs of being drawn into bad company, and warned him to be more cautious for the future: So diſcharged him, and committed Turner; who was hanged.

That accident, though very lucky, by preſerving innocent Phil. from being made acceſſary to a robbery which would have put his life in jeopardy, at the end proved fatal; he having thereby gained the character of belonging to ſome ill gang: For which reaſon, nobody cared to be concerned with him, which grieved his poor mother.

The poor widow (being left with her unfortunate ſon, who ſhe feared would take to ſome evil way for want, which often tempts the moſt innocent inclined) not being able, out of her ſmall gettings, to maintain him, as when aſſiſted by her late huſband; and ſeeing no proſpect of his maſter's coming out of priſon, and being ſet up again; endeavoured to get him into ſome place to wait upon ſome of her miſtreſſes: But the unlucky accident of being had before a juſtice of the peace, with a notorious houſe-breaker, fruſtrated her endeavours; ſo that poor Phil. was obliged to continue with his mother in a very mean condition, which his honeſt mother very much feared would induce him to evil company, of which the pariſh ſhe lived in ſwarmed: But the good inſtructions which were given him in his infancy, before bad examples could have made any impreſſion on his mind, kept out of his thoughts all wicked devices. Thus, ſeeing no probability of amendment in the ſtation he was in, he reſolved upon going to ſea, wanting for that employment neither character nor recommendation, which he was ſenſible

would be a hard matter to get, by reaſon of this moſt fatal accident.

Thus, having imparted his deſign to his loving mother, who, with much reluctance, acquieſced in his going from her, and leaving his native country, where ſhe once had hopes to ſee him well ſettled; ſhe, with weeping eyes, implores the Almighty to direct and receive him into his protection: And as ſhe was acquainted with no one that could direct and adviſe him in that matter, ſhe bid him go to St. Catherine's; there, ſaid ſhe, you may chance to hear of ſome captain or maſter of a ſhip, bound for ſome ſhort voyage, who, perhaps may want a cabin-boy; which is, my dear child, all that your age and ſtrength qualifies you for: In a few years, with the help of God, you may find ſome advantageous opportunity to advance yourſelf by your learning. So, having given him ſix pence to bear his charges, with a tender kiſs, ſhe goes to her wonted occupation, and he ſtrait to St. Catherine's, where providence had prepared a maſter for him; he being no ſooner come thither, than a captain of a ſhip, bound for the Eaſt-Indies, taking a particular fancy to him, aſked him whether he would go to ſea; and that, if he was ſo diſpoſed, he would take him to look after his cabin, and provide very well for him.

The gentle manner in which he ſpoke to the boy, and his mild countenance, made a vaſt progreſs in his affection: So having joyfully accepted his offer, he deſires that he may run home, and acquaint his mother of it. The captain, having taken his name, and place of abode, gave him half a crown to ſpend with his mother, and then to come to him at the ſign of the Black Boy, near the Iron Gate; that he need bring no clothes with him; for he would provide every thing neceſſary for the voyage.

The

The overjoyed boy, having told his mother of his extraordinary ſucceſs, gave her the money, being in great haſte to return to his new maſter: So having embraced his tender mother, and ſhe her dear ſon, weeping over one another for ſome time, he leaves her at her work.

The good woman, tho' ſhe had all the reaſon in the world to be eaſy in her mind, that the boy was out of thoſe temptations which great want, and bad company, might lead him into, could not be reconciled at his going from her: But, ſeeing no remedy, ſhe ſends crouds of prayers after him, accompanied with ſhowers of tears, recommending him to the care of heaven, to whom ſhe daily made addreſſes for his proſperity.

Phil. who from his infancy had been uſed to be from his mother, was leſs diſturbed at his leaving her, nothing but his new-intended voyage running in his mind; ſo haſtened to the rendezvous his new maſter had appointed him; who, not expecting that he would return, was ſo glad to ſee him, that he went that moment and bought him both clothes and linen fit for the ſea; ſo equipped him anew cap a-pee; then took him home, and in a few days after ſet ſail for a three years voyage.

During their ſailing, Phil. whoſe agreeable aſpect and temper had gained him all the ſhip's crew's love, being often with the man at the helm, ſoon learned the compaſs: and by the inſtructions every body on board ſtrove to give him, in a little time he was qualified for a ſailor; which his maſter being made ſenſible of, whom he had often diverted with his ſinging during that voyage, allowed him ſailor's pay, the following voyage, which was ſoon after; for in leſs than three weeks time the ſhip was new-laden, and ſet out again for the ſame place, and was gone as long as be-

fore; at the end whereof it returned home richly laden, and in a ſhorter time than was common: Which being put in the news, as uſual, prompted a certain number of Drury Lane nymphs to go down to the place where they heard the ſhip was arrived; ſuppoſing that the luſty ſailors, having a long time been confined to ſalt meat, would, at their arrival, being fluſh of money, purchaſe a bit of freſh at any rate.

Being come to Graveſend, where the ſhip lay, they found according to cuſtom, the jolly crew in an alehouſe, ſpending, like aſſes, what they had earned like horſes, even before they had received it.

At the ladies coming, the elevated ſailors, who had been ſailing on ſalt water for the ſpace of three years, and ſince ſet their brains floating in ſtrong drink, for ſix hours, having loſt the rudder of their reaſon, ran headlong upon thoſe quick-ſands, where moſt of them loſt all they had, before they could get off.

The ingenious ladies, who had more wit than honeſty, improved the abſence of their underſtanding; and being very expert in the art of fathoming, they fell to examining the depth of thoſe ſhallow-brained fellow's pockets; which finding very low, they were much diſheartened from going on, for fear of running a ground: But, underſtanding that there ſhip had not yet been cleared, they caſt their anchor there, waiting for a freſh gale.

Mean time the merry ſailors, fearing no ſtorm, gave themſelves up to ſport; and, for better diverſion, every man takes a playfellow, and goes aſide, leaving baſhful Phil. behind; who, being a ſtranger to the game they were going to play at, did not dare to put in for a partner: But croſs fate ſtill attending him, a ſnare is laid in which he muſt fall.

Every man, but modeſt Quarll, being gone away with

with a wench; one, being gone ſupernumerary, ſtayed behind. The crafty creature, who, from her firſt coming in, had fixed on the innocent young man for her quarry, kept at ſome diſtance from her comrades; waiting their abſence, to work her deſign.

Unthinking Phil. having no ſuſpicion of her cunning devices, lying intirely unguarded againſt her ſly attacks, ſtood no long ſiege, but capitulated at the firſt ſummons. 'Tis true, ſhe was provided with ſuch artillery, as no fortifications againſt love could withſtand; but would force the moſt ſtubborn to ſurrender, or at leaſt parley, which is a fore-runner thereof.

Thus, having fixed her baſiliſk's eyes upon him, as being the firſt battering-piece the ſex plants, when they propoſe a breach in a man's heart: ſhe charges him with a volley of engaging words, whilſt her looks and carriage offer him ſuch prevailing terms, as no man of any feeling can refuſe: Therefore being an exquiſite miſtreſs of her art, ſhe ſoon obtains her ends.

Poor Quarll, whoſe heart, till then, had never been beſieged, finding the invader more tempting than dreadful, ſhe having a very agreeable ſhape, charming complexion, and moſt engaging features, ſurrenders upon diſcretion, and ſubmits even to bear the yoke of matrimony; which, in leſs than an hour, is laid upon him; the chaplain of a man of war, who lodged in the houſe, happening to come in at that critical minute.

By that time, the abſent revelling crew were cloyed with their miſtreſſes, and had diſmiſſed them with rough uſage, and ill language, of which they are generally ſluſh, when money is ſcant.

The diſappointed wretches, ſeeing no redreſs for their treatment lately received, which they well knew proceeded from want of money, concluded upon ſlay-

ing in that place till their ſhip was cleared; by which time their appetite being ſharpened again, and they fluſh of money, and hoping they would alſo be better chaps; they took a garret in a little ſtrong-water-ſhop, where they made ſhift to kennel together, and live upon ſhort commons.

Our new married couple, whoſe money was but ſcanty, were alſo obliged to put up with indifferent quarters, but the hopes of receiving the poor huſbands pay ſoon, and withal, the thoughts of being protected from a gaol, which ſhe was in danger of, before married, being the principal advantage ſhe propoſed to herſelf by having a huſband, it made her now eaſy, But ſhe, and all the reſt of her companions, were diſappointed. The ſhip being unladen, the cargo proved damaged, by the leaking of the veſſel, which is commonly made good by the ſailors: So that, inſtead of three years wages being due, the poor men ſtood indebted to the merchants.

That diſappointment put the unfortunate ſeamen, and eſpecially the ladies, into a ſad conſternation; the former being obliged to go another voyage with empty pockets, and the latter to ſeek for cullies to ſupport their extravagance, and to pay for new lodgings.

Phil. who, during the voyage had ſaved a little money, which his maſter gave him at ſundry times, being diſguſted at the ſea, by the late accident, reſolves to ſeek his better fortune in another manner.

His crafty wife, who was, by her marriage, ſcreened from her creditors, depending upon her former occupation, indulged him in that reſolution; ſo they ſet out with that little he had, and arrived pretty bare. Finding no friends in London, his maſter being dead whilſt he was at ſea, he reſolves to liſt in the foot-guards for bread, having no other dependence; ſo conſults

ſults with his ſpouſe about a lodging, till he had quarters appointed for him. She, indeed, was beſt acquainted with the town, and knew of ſeveral that would ſuit both their ſtock and ſtation, but durſt go to none, having bilked moſt of them, and left a ſcore with the reſt. But lodging muſt be had before night; and the day was far ſpent; which ſet her a thinking, neceſſity being the mother of invention: And ſhe, as is peculiar to women of her employment, being well acquainted with it, was no ſtranger to ſhifts; and preſently finds one.

Having pondered for a ſhort time, ſhe concludes upon going to her laſt lodgings; where tho' ſhe was conſiderably in debt, ſhe queſtioned not but ſhe ſhould ſtill find a kind reception, and that her landlady, where ſhe had been about a fortnight, having given over her debt, would at her coming ſlacken the ill opinion ſhe had conceived of her, and afford her kind uſage: So, having fixed a rendezvous for her huſband, ſhe haſtens there; where ſhe found, as was expected, the old woman as overjoyed as ſurprized to ſee her; and much more, when ſhe underſtood ſhe was married to a ſailor, lately arrived from a three year's voyage; who in a ſhort time, would be cleared, and that then ſhe would rub off her ſcore. The old woman thinking herſelf ſecure of her debt, and ſure of a good cuſtomer, bids her kindly welcome; and that ſhe hoped ſhe would take no other lodging, but in her houſe; that ſhe would make every thing as eaſy and convenient as ſhe ſhould deſire; being as welcome to ſcore, as with ready money.

The ſubtle woman, having gained her ends, goes and fetches her huſband, whom the over-reached old woman receives moſt kindly, expreſſing her love by a quartern of all-fours, the chief commodity of her houſe:

That, being drank, was ſucceeded by a ſecond, at the new tenant's coſt; which, being brought with a chearful welcome to as many as they pleaſed encouraged the coming-in of half a dozen more: Theſe warmed the company, and particularly the landlady; who having greeted Quarll for his moſt happy marriage, over and over, fell upon praiſing his wife, whom ſhe had known for a long time; giving her all the encomiums that virtue itſelf could deſerve.

In this manner they lived about a fortnight, ſtill upon ſcore; which increaſing very faſt, and no proſpect of money, it obliged the landlady to put them in mind; often aſking when they expected the ſhip to be cleared. Quarll, who diſcerned, by the cloud which appeared over her brow, a threatning ſtorm, begins to think of an harbour, and forthwith goes and liſts himſelf in the foot-guards.

In that mean ſtation, which often is the laſt ſpite of a ſurly fate, a continuation of misfortunes attends him: The company, where he liſted in, is full of mercers and ſhopkeepers, who for a protection took on in the ſervice, and quitted their pay to the covetous colonel, to be exempted from duty, which made it fall heavy on the effective men: But kind Providence, who ever limited the evil that attended him by fortune, ordered this its vexatious influence to turn to his advantage.

One day that he mounted guard out of his turn, being upon duty at the park-gate next to Chelſea, about ten at night, the place being clear of people, he fell a ſinging to divert melancholy thoughts, which ſolitude is apt to indulge: at that time happened to come by a colonel of the ſame regiment, who, being merrily diſpoſed, ſtopped for ſeveral minutes to hear him ſing: Quarll, having made an end of his ſong, fell a whiſtling the tune; at which the colonel came

came to him, ſaying, how can you profane ſuch a fine tune with whiſtling, when you can ſing it ſo well? pray let me hear you do it once more; and grace it with that good voice nature has given you. Quarll, having made ſome few modeſt excuſes, yields to his preſſing ſolicitation, and ſings the ſame ſong over again, and with more care than before; which ſo pleaſed the gentleman, that he ſtood half an hour with him, aſking him queſtions: And, being by him informed whoſe company he belonged to, having his conſent to be exchanged, he gives him five ſhillings to drink his health; and charges him to come to him, at the Mitre tavern at Charing-Croſs, the next day at eight of the clock in the evening, and aſk for colonel Bonguard: ſo went away.

Quarll, being off duty, the next day went to the place, at the time appointed; where he finds the colonel, in company with half a ſcore more gentlemen, who received him with more civility and complaiſance than is commonly paid to men of his coat: ſo, having deſired him to ſit down amongſt them, and the glaſs gone round once or twice, the colonel having praiſed his ſinging to the company, he was deſired to compliment them with a ſong; if he pleaſed, with that he ſung to the colonel the night before. Quarll, having modeſtly told the gentlemen, he wiſhed that his ſkill and voice, deſerved the honour of their hearing, and that he would do the beſt he could, having, at their requeſt, drank another glaſs, he ſung the ſong they deſired to their great ſatisfaction and applauſe.

After a ſhort ſpace of time was ſpent in the praiſe of ſinging, and a talk of what an engaging accompliſhment it is, either in man or woman; ſome of the company, holding that the charms of muſick are no-

wiſe

wiſe inferior tothe power of love; it occaſioned a very agreeable debate; there being in the company a gentleman unfortunately under that circumſtance, who would give love the ſupremacy over all that can affect our minds: ſeeing it ſtrips a man of the benefits of his own ſenſes, of the ſtrength of his reaſon, and ſoundneſs of judgment. No object is fair, but that whoſe idea hath impreſſed the mind; no harmony heard but in the beloved voice, or that which ſounds its praiſe; dainties have no ſavour in the abſence of that which every thing reliſhes; the faireſt days are but dull, if not enlivened by the light of the charmer's preſence.

Thus he ran on, till the company, perceiving he was beginning to be uneaſy, deſired Quarll to ſing the gentleman a love ſong, who ſpoke ſo much in its praiſe; which he did, and pleaſed the lover ſo exceedingly, that he made him a preſent of half a guinea. The gentleman, who was altogether for muſick, having aſked Quarll whether he had any thing in the praiſe of it, having alſo his requeſt anſwered; made the reſt of the company crave a ſong in the commendation of what ſuited their inclinations; ſome being for a bottle, others for roving, and others for a country life.

Quarll, being provided with ſuch ſongs, entertained them to their deſires till ſupper was brought up; which being over, the company who had been ſo well diverted with Quarll's ſinging, conſulted together to do him ſervice: And, as he was well qualified to teach, they propoſed to recommend him ſcholars. A gentleman in company, having a ſiſter, who intended to learn, he writes a letter to her, deſiring ſhe would make uſe of no other maſter; which letter he was to carry the next morning: And as his

regimental

regimental clothes might leſſen her opinion of his merit, he bids him, before he goes, to call at his lodging, and he would preſent him with a ſuit of clothes, which he wore but part of laſt ſummer, and therefore little the worſe for wearing. And, as he wanted but an hat to be completely dreſſed (having an extraordinary handſome head of hair) another gentleman bids him call on him for one; ſo that he had all he wanted to ſet him out.

The gentleman having given him directions where to go for the things, and the colonel his promiſe to get him diſcharged out of the company he did belong to; at leaſt, to have him exchanged into his own; they every one gave him their crown apiece: ſo they departed, bidding him not fail coming hither again that day ſevennight.

This unexpected, but lucky adventure, like a ſudden ſurprize, unframed his reaſon, and makes poor Quarll overlook the only obſtacle that could obſtruct his blooming happineſs. Thus tranſported with ſeeing himſelf maſter of more money than ever he was worth before, and in a fair proſpect of advancing himſelf; he haſtens home, and in this guard-clothes, in which he ought not to be ſeen there; being a dreſs obnoxious to moſt, and more eſpecially to creditors.

His landlady, who, till then, had been made to expect her money, thinking he only waited the ſhip's being diſcharged, to go another voyage; ſeeing him in that hope-killing dreſs, gave a ſhriek, as if ſhe had ſeen the devil: ſlanders and abuſes, ſtriving for utterance, croud in her foaming mouth; and, like a rapid torrent, which, running from a large extent into a narrow channel, ſwells, and overflows its banks; ſo her paſſion, finding her mouth too ſmall a paſſage, breaks out through her eyes: Thus, having ſhriek'd

and

and roared a while, which occaſioned all her lodgers to come down, ſhe charges poor aſtoniſhed Quarll with ſhoals of abuſes, in the vileſt and moſt inſulting terms the moſt inveterate malice can expreſs.

Thus having exhauſted her ſtock of ſlanders, her tongue having uttered all the evil ſhe could, ſhe ſet her miſchievous hands to work upon his wife; who, being come to ſee the occaſion of her ſhrieking, ſtood like one bereft of her ſenſes: ſo, having torn her head-clothes off her head, with words ſuitable to the barbarous deeds, ſhe thruſts them both out of doors; which tho' the rudeſt action that could denote the unmerciſulneſs of her intended revenge, was to them at that time, the kindeſt act ſhe could perform.

That unexpected treatment was no ſmall check to Quarll's chearful diſpoſition, but having conſidered, that one time or other he muſt have ſtood the ſhock, he rejoices that it is over; and, being free from the care of getting her paid, he has at that time nothing to think of but to find another lodging; which being then too late to go about, he concludes to wait for morning at a certain cellar at Charing Croſs, which is open all night. Going along, ſhe mildly blamed him for his unadviſed coming in that dreſs, which, he might imagine, could produce no better effect. To which he anſwered, he never could have wiſhed for better: For, by her turning him out of doors, ſhe had paid herſelf; which he would have done, had he ſtayed: But now he was come away, being better provided, and in a better way, he would have better lodgings; ſo told her of the adventure, which much rejoiced her; and from that time made her reſolve to forſake her former way of living, which misfortunes only drove her to, being not led by evil inclination, as many are. The morning being come, whilſt ſhe

went

went to ſeek for lodging, he went for the clothes he was promiſed the evening before, which fitted him as if made on purpoſe, and made him appear as one of the genteel employment he was recommended for. Being new ſhaved and powdered, he went with the letter, according to order; and was received ſuitably to the recommendation given him. The lady, being juſt up, made him drink chocolate with her; then, having required a ſong, ſhe agrees with him for a guinea a month, the uſual rate, and gives him a guinea at entrance, as 'tis common; ſo began that very morning, promiſing to recommend him to a lady, who had two daughters; which ſhe accordingly did, and ſent him thither the next time he came.

This fair proſpect of an handſome and genteel living, which he always was deſirous of, made him forget his paſt misfortunes. Thus joyfully he returns to the cellar, where he had ſpent the night before, and where he had appointed to meet his wife, after ſhe had fixed upon a lodging; who accordingly came in leſs than a quarter of an hour, hoping ſhe had pleaſed her huſband, which ſhe reſolved for the future to endeavour. She ſat down, expecting his coming, not knowing he had already waited hers; his change of dreſs concealing him from her, not expecting to ſee him in ſo different a garb from that which ſhe left him in: which he perceiving, comes up to her, and takes her by the hand, going to aſk her the ſucceſs of her walk; but ſhe putting it out of his power, in an angry manner bidding him go about his buſineſs, having none with her, prevented his ſpeaking. His ſilence, which ſhe took to proceed from baſhfulneſs, occaſioned her looking him in the face; in which diſcovering her dear huſband's features, to whoſe natural handſomeneſs his genteel clothes were no ſmall addition,

addition, ſhe was ſeized with ſuch a ſurprize, that it ſtruck her ſpeechleſs for ſome minutes.

Quarll, diſcerning her diſorder by the fading of her freſh complexion, was as much ſurprized as ſhe. Thus trembling he takes her in his arms: My dear, ſaid he, what's the matter? Are you not well? having recovered her ſpeech, ſhe embraced him, ſaying, How can I be ill, when my dear heart and ſoul appears ſo well?

Theſe kind words and the return of that fluſh which firſt kindled love's fire in his heart, inflames it afreſh; hardly can he govern his new raiſed paſſion: Thus, giving her a kiſs, my love, ſays he, have you got me a lodging? Yes, my dear, replies the loving wife; you ſhall ever dwell in my heart. But I want to lie in your arms, anſwers he; that can't be done here. Well, then, ſaid ſhe, I have provided a fit place. So, having each of them taken a dram, they went away.

Sally, who till then was a ſtranger to real love, now feels its true ſmart; and tho' ſhe has for ſome time enjoyed the fruition, the only bliſs pains-taking lovers aſpire at for the reward of all their toils and labours, and the happy ſhore love's compaſs points at, yet ſhe ſeems uneaſy, as expecting ſomething more: ſhe cavils with time for flying too faſt. Whole days and nights are too ſhort for her to behold her dear. ſhe continually bears his image in her heart, and wiſhes ſhe could for ever have him in her arms; which from that time ſhe conſecrates to chaſte embraces; devoting herſelf wholly to the diligent and aſſiduous practice of the neceſſary qualifications in a wife, to render an huſband truly happy: the execution of which wiſe and virtuous reſolutions, gained her the tendereſt and moſt ſincere love and

affection

affection a really fond huſband can ſhew or expreſs to a darling wife.

They lived in that truly happy ſtate about half a year, at the end of which, cruel fate, envious of his uncommon happineſs, moſt barbarouſly robs him of it, almoſt as ſoon as he had ſavoured its incomparable and matchleſs ſweets.

One ſummer morning, loving and truly-obſerving Sally, knowing her huſband delighted in flowers and greens, went to Covent Garden, in order to buy ſome to garniſh her windows and chimney, being the only things wanting to complete the neatneſs of her lodging, which ſhe kept in the greateſt order. As ſhe was going, ſhe moſt unfortunately met with the perjured knight, who deceived her out of her virtue, and with whom ſhe had lived a conſiderable time, in expectation of his fulfilling the promiſe he made her, when ſhe put him in poſſeſſion of her maiden-treaſure; who, being glutted with his ſacrilegious theft, moſt baſely and ungratefully left her deſtitute. Fain would ſhe have ſhunned the fatal principle and origin of her paſt misfortunes, and helliſh motive of her late evil life, which ſhe mortally abhorred and zealouſly renounced: but inexorable fate has decreed her ruin; ſhe can no wiſe avoid him; he was too near before ſhe perceived him, and had hold of her hand ere ſhe could ſhift it out of his way.

Being thus ſuddenly ſtopped by him, ſhe would have embraced the ſevereſt death, to avoid the vile ſeducer, by whom her innocence was firſt betrayed. The irreconcilable antipathy ſhe had conceived for the mortal enemy of her newly-retrieved virtue, being ſtartled at his terrifying appearance, ſet her whole faculty in an uproar, and ſcares away her ſenſes; not ſo much as a word left her to expreſs her trouble.

The

The amorous knight, whoſe late love for the fair Sally (whoſe regular living had repaired thoſe charms her former lewd life had very much damaged) was revived, and grown more paſſionate than ever, flattering his hopes with the thoughts, that her preſent diſorder proceeded from joy and ſurpriſe, took the opportunity of an empty hackney-coach which was going by, to bring her to his lodgings: ſo, having, ſtopped it, he puts in the poor diſpirited woman, altogether inſenſible of what was done, or deſigned; but having, with the ſhaking of the coach, recovered a little ſpirit, and finding herſelf ſo much in his power, as aimed at her total ruin, ſhe gave a loud ſhriek, which occaſioned the coach to be ſtopped by ſome people who were going by; but his proteſting he had no other deſign but to take her to a friend's houſe till ſhe was intirely recovered, repreſenting alſo the danger of expoſing herſelf by oppoſing his kind intention, being then near a ſtreet where he and ſhe had lived together a conſiderable time, in ſome meaſure pacified her: ſo having put his head out of the coach, he tells the people who ſtood by, that his wife, who had been lately overſet, was afraid of the like accident, which made her ſcream; ſo bid the coachman drive on; during which time he entertains her with all the marks of a paſſionate love, ſwearing over-and over, he was her ſlave for ever; and that now kind fortune once more brought them together, none but death ſhould ſever him from the perſon he loved ſo dear; and that he would expire in thoſe ſoft arms which often gave him life.

Thoſe fond expreſſions, which ſhe formerly had given credit to, are now upbraidings and reproaches for her too eaſy credulity, and only increaſed her hatred for the deluder; which, at that time, ſhe thought proper

proper to conceal: thus, reſtraining her paſſion, ſhe aſſumes a feigned calmneſs, and mildly returns him thanks for his love, which ſhe cannot indulge, being married. Married! ſaid he, and I living! was you not mine? I was, indeed replyed ſhe, bluſhing with anger and ſhame. But what was I! I tremble to think on't. Why, ſaid he, my love and heart's delight, and ſhall be, whilſt breath keeps it in motion. Oh! falſe man; ſaid ſhe, weeping moſt bitterly, repeat not thoſe deluding words, which betrayed my virtue. Come, ſaid he, ceaſe that flood which overflows my ſoul with the bittereſt of ſorrows, and reprieve the moſt penitent of men from the cruelleſt of deaths: my ſubmiſſive obſervance of your inclinations ſhall henceforth atone for all paſt given diſpleaſures. Mean you, ſaid ſhe, as you ſpeak? by all that's ſacred, I do, reply'd he. Then, ſaid Sally joyful, ſet me down here, and I'll forgive what's paſt. No, my dear, this being a requeſt I cannot in honour grant, I may, without breach of promiſe refuſe; I muſt ſee you quite re-eſtabliſhed firſt.

By this time the coach was arrived to the directed place, which proved to be an houſe where ſhe had laſt lived with the knight; which being open, and the landlady at the door, obliged her to go in without reſiſtance; fearing it would be of no uſe, but rather prejudicial to her deſign: ſo ſhe quietly went in, hoping ſhe ſhould have a better opportunity to get away, after ſhe had made the landlady underſtand that ſhe was married. But the ſordid wretch, hoping the knight would lodge there again, who proved an extraordinary beneficial lodger before, went out of the room, and left her to his pleaſure.

Poor Sally, ſeeing herſelf at the point of being a ſecond time undone, there being no one to aſſiſt her within,

within, nor hopes of any help from abroad, the room ſhe was in being backwards, next to large gardens, and diſtant from the houſe, and therefore out of hearing; gives herſelf up to deſpair, ſeeking the opportunity of laying hold of his ſword, on which ſhe was reſolved to fall, rather than yield to his adulterous deſires. Thus, whilſt the knight was labouring to expreſs the height of his love, by the moſt endearing terms, and prevailing words, the moſt paſſionate lover could invent; ſhe, of a ſudden, ſnatched the ſword from his ſide, and turned the point thereof towards her breaſt, in order to execute her barbarous, though virtuous reſolution. What do you mean? ſaid he, laying hold of her arm. To get myſelf at liberty, ſaid ſhe, which you baſely refuſe: ſo falls into a violent fit, which laſted ſome minutes; which was no ſooner over, but it was ſucceeded by another, and ſo on, for the ſpace of three hours; at the end of which time ſhe was ſo faint and weak, that her life was deſpaired of, and ſo continued all day; which made the knight repent that he had forced her to ſtay, ſo much againſt her will; heartily wiſhing that he knew where ſhe lived, that he might ſend her home; which ſhe not being well enough to tell, the landlady, by the knight's order, got the beſt room of the houſe fitted up for her, and the bed being warmed, ſhe was carefully laid in it, and a doctor ſent for; who, having felt her diſordered pulſe, ſaid, her indiſpoſition proceeded from paſſion and grief; and ordered that ſhe ſhould be let blood, which would give her oppreſſed ſpirits a preſent relief. The phyſician was no ſooner gone, but the ſurgeon was ſent for, to perform the doctor's orders, which gave her immediate eaſe, and in a little time cauſed her to ſleep, which laſted all the night.

This great and ſudden amendment much rejoic-

ed

ed the moſt afflicted knight, who made a vow not to leave her till ſhe was reſtored to her wonted health; ſitting up by her all night.

The next morning, Sally, whoſe good night's reſt had in a great meaſure recovered both ſtrength and reaſon, finding herſelf in a ſtrange bed, and from her huſband, was again ſeized with ſurprize, which did mueh threaten a relapſe. heavens! ſaid ſhe, by what inchantment am I here! what fiends could raviſh me out of my dear ſpouſe's arms? then, ſeeing the knight ſtand by the bed ſide, ſhe gives a loud ſhriek: oh! vile raviſher! ſaid ſhe, is it then by another of your helliſh ſtratagems that I am again betrayed into your power? at which ſhe fell into a violent fit of crying,—No, moſt virtuous woman, replyed the knight, falling on his knees; it is by accident, of which I own myſelf to be the moſt miſerable occaſion, for which I heartily aſk both heaven and you pardon. Then he relates the whole matter, which the late illneſs her exceſſive grief and paſſion brought upon her, had made her forget.

That woful relation did but add to her trouble, by heightening her grief. oh! ſaid ſhe, with a freſh ſhower of tears, how can I now look my dear huſband in the face, when my very juſtification turns to my ſhame?

The knight, who was in as great a conſternation as ſhe could be in, takes her hand, which lay motionleſs out of the bed, and, bathing it with tears, begs her to forbear terrifying his moſt penitent ſoul, promiſing to rectify all paſt wrongs: you remember, my life, ſaid he, the vows I made when firſt you gave yourſelf to me: I renew them now, and would fulfil them, but that it would expoſe you to the rigour of the law: therefore I'll only, for the preſent, ſettle five hundred

pound

pounds a year upon you for your life, till, by your husband's death, I am impowered to make you lawful mistress of all my estate. pray compose yourself, and sedately consider on't, and when 'tis come to a conclusion, I'll attend for your answer: so withdrew for a while.

This generous offer, expressing the sincerity of his love, for whom she had formerly more than a common esteem, in a great measure appeased her passion; the offered atonement disarms her revenge; she now pleads for him she had condemned, and blames herself for the crime she had charged him with. How could I, said she, think my virtue safe in his hands, on whom love has such an ascendant (which is itself guilty of as many faults as it covers)? if he went away with my heart, it was but a breach of trust: besides, his absence was no flight, it being occasioned by business.

Having made these reconcilable reflections, and being at the point of accepting his offer, conscience starts, and opposes her resolution: her husband stands in the way, rigged in all those engaging qualifications which had won her affection. This, coming into her mind, in a manner scares away her reason; she can't help loving both; her love for the knight pleads seniority, and that for her husband justice. The first is attended with interest, the last is prompted by virtue. The debate is great, and both their arguments strong: reason is called to decide the matter, which, having (as 'tis her custom) sedately weighed the cause, examined both accidents and incidents, at last seems inclinable to favour the love for the knight; but justice, who is always in the right, will not resign it; peace and content, the only motives worth contending for, must be consulted. They, being

also

alſo cautious of giving a raſh verdict, examined on which ſide they were in moſt ſafety; and finding themſelves moſt ſcreened from upbraidings and reproaches (their mortal enemies) for the knight, gave it of his ſide. So juſtice, who ſeldom gets its due, is forced to drop the cauſe, and tacitly withdraw.

The knight's offer, being the ſofteſt choice for an eaſy and quiet life, which ſhe could not reaſonably expect from her huſband, who doubtleſs would, from the late accident, conceive an ill opinion of her virtue, (which altho' at that time blameleſs, ſhe could not with modeſty vindicate) having ſent for the knight, ſhe ſpeaks to him after this manner:

I have had ſo much reaſon to repent my being too credulous, by the many vexations it has occaſioned me now, that ſhould I, upon the bare repeating of broken promiſes, expoſe myſelf to the ſame, you yourſelf could not but blame me. Indeed, dear Sally, ſaid the knight, interrupting her, I own you have ſufficient cauſe to queſtion my ſincerity; but I will this moment remove it: So that moment ſends for a lawyer, and makes the propoſed ſettlement; then gives orders that a mercer ſhould be fetched for her, to take her choice of the moſt modiſh ſilks, and then for a ſilk night-gown, for her to wear till her clothes were made: as alſo for all manner of linnen, ſhoes, and ſtockings. Then having new rigged her from top to toe, now, ſaid he, my dear, you are entirely mine; give me directions, that I may ſend your huſband what he can challenge as his own; ſo writes the following letter:

"SIR,

"Leſt the abſence of her, who unthinkingly gave "herſelf to you for a wife (tho' not at her own "diſpoſal, being mine before) ſhould cauſe you any

" farther trouble, theſe are to ſatisfy you, that I have " re-taken poſſeſſion of my own ; to ſend you back her " clothes, as being all you can claim a right to.

" I am yours, *R. S.*"

Having ſealed up the letter, and bundled up the clothes, a porter was called, to whom orders were given, to carry the bundle and letter, to the moſt perplexed and concerned Quarll, who ſpent the night in unſpeakable torment. A thouſand diſmal accidents glared at his alarmed fancy, which created new racks for his tortured ſoul. He tumbles on his bed like an unmaſted ſhip toſſed about by a violent ſtorm, curſing the tedious hours for creeping thus in the dark night; taxing the ſun with ſloth and nature with unkindneſs. Thus, like one bereft of his ſenſes, and quite void of reaſon, he ſnarls at the whole creation.

At length the long-wiſhed-for day having ſent forth its dawn, to proclaim its approach, he ſtarts from off the bed whereon he lay as if upon thorns, and like a mad man, runs about to inform himſelf of what he dreads, more than death, to know. But having ſpent ſeveral hours in diligent enquiry after lately befallen accidents, without hearing of any ; jealouſy creeps in, which in ſome meaſure removes his former fears, but no-wiſe leſſens his pains. Thus he returns home as much racked as before.

Being arrived, he finds on his table a bundle, and a letter, which his landlady told him were brought by a porter. His impatience to know the contents of both were equal ; but the bundle being more ſurprizing to him, he precipitately opens it firſt ; which finding it to be every individual part of the clothes his wife had on the day before, when ſhe went out ; with the ſurprize, he lets it drop out of his hands, and,

like

like one thunderſtruck, remained ſpeechleſs for ſeveral minutes. Then fetching a deep and heavy ſigh, attended with a ſhower of tears, he bitterly exclaims againſt himſelf for queſtioning the faithfulneſs of that love, of which he now has ſuch fatal proofs.

Thus, concluding ſhe had drowned herſelf, and that the letter would inform him of the cauſe thereof; he takes it up, ſaying, O that thou hadſt been a timely forerunner of the fatal tidings thou art bearer of! Yet for her dear ſake that wrote it, I'll peruſe thee, tho' thy contents be but racks for me, and the moſt cruel tortures that ever were or can be invented.

But great was his ſurprize, when he found it to come from a man; and inexpreſſible his confuſion at the contents: His ſenſes are all in an uproar; he blames his eyes for not ſeeing right; his apprehenſion for miſtaking the meaning: His blind love taxes his reaſon with raſhneſs, the miſtaken expreſſions being but illuſions proceeding from an oppreſſion upon the intellects: So lays down the letter till his diſturbed mind was better ſettled. Yet he cannot be eaſy; he muſt with ſome other writing, try whether his eyes are ſtill defective: On which, finding no fault, he haſtily takes up the letter again; but alas! it was the ſame as before. My judgment, ſaid he, has been as much wronged as my love. So, after a few conſiderations, calling to mind, that as an accident had procured her to him, he ought, without reluctancy, to ſurrender her again; having made a reſolution never to venture any more on that uncertain ſtate, which commonly promiſes happineſs, but often brings ſorrow: He ſhifts his lodging, and goes to live where he was unknown, the better to paſs for a batchelor; in which free ſtation he enjoyed peace undiſturbed, and pleaſures uncontrouled, for the ſpace of twelve

months: But croſs fate ſtill purſues him; he muſt again be fettered, and bear yet heavier chains than before. A ſecond mate is allotted him, who, though very chaſte, dooms him wretched, being ſhort of other qualifications neceſſary in a wife to make a man happy.

This woman had been bred up from her infancy under the care of a lady, whoſe two daughters Quarll taught to ſing, and had lived with her in ſtation of a chamber-maid, ever ſince ſhe was big enough to officiate in that place; during which time, having behaved herſelf to her miſtreſs's content, ſhe gained her affection; ſo that this good lady, being deſirous to advance her maid, whoſe age fitted her for marriage, the chief ſettlement for a woman, ſhe caſt her eyes upon her daughters' ſinging-maſter, who ſhe thought would make her a good huſband, having obſerved him ever ſince he came to her houſe, to carry and behave himſelf very decently. Thus having declared her mind to her, who had already a great inclination that way, ſhe readily ſubmitted to her lady's will, who promiſed to bring it about.

The good lady having conceived the principal means to bring her deſign about, took the opportunity of Quarll's next coming, to propoſe it to him, promiſing to make her worth three hundred pounds, which was the only motive that could engage him to break the reſolution he had made. The young woman being alſo very agreeable in her perſon, and extraordinary obliging to him, he readily accepted the offer.

The old lady, having ſo far prevailed upon him, is reſolved to puſh on till quite concluded; ſo has them married in leſs than a week, and gave them lodgings in her houſe, where they continued but one month. The new-married wife, thinking herſelf, in ſome meaſure,

ſure, under confinement whilſt in the good lady's houſe, to whom duty and gratitude obliged her to be more than indifferently obſerving, being likewiſe ſomewhat ambitious of living great, perſuades her huſband to take a houſe, and furniſh it; which being done according to her deſire, they went away from the kind old lady to live by themſelves, without conſidering the expence of houſekeeping, which they both, till then, had been ſtrangers to, but, in a little time, became too well acquainted with.

The three hundred pounds being gone in furniſhing the houſe and paying two years rent, and as many years wages to a couple of maids, one whereof ſhe kept in the ſtation ſhe herſelf had but lately overcome; Quarll was obliged to reduce his charges, and level his expences to his income; ſo diſcharges the ſuperfluous ſervant, whoſe buſineſs was only to indulge her indolence, and increaſe her pride.

That ſudden leſſening of her attendants checked her ambitious diſpoſition, in ſuch a manner that it threw her into the ſpleen; which was like to have coſt him more money in doctors, than the ſervant's wages which he endeavoured to ſave.

Being taken very ill, and knowing not what to complain of, a doctor was granted, at her importunity, rather than her need; who, being come, and finding her indiſpoſition lie in her temper, more than a defect of nature, ordered her medicines to make them both in the ſame condition.

Her ſtrength decaying, and the apothecary's bill increaſing, which are the uſual effects of imaginary illneſs, made her huſband apprehenſive, that conſiderable charges might accrue from her fanciful and imaginary diſtemper, which he would not indulge; and feared to check too ſuddenly, leſt it might produce

ſome other ill effect: So, in compliance to her natural pride, he promiſes her going in the country, as being a proper expedient to ſave his money, and to be rid of a grunting companion, at leaſt during the ſummer.

This propoſal, ſuiting her ambition to imitate quality (who, for the generality, go out of town about that time of the year) was ſoon accepted of; and that opportunity of being freed from one of the greateſt plagues which can befal a man, by him as ſoon approved.

Quarll, having got her in the mind, was no wiſe dilatory to get it performed; but made diligent inquiry about the moſt convenient place in the country, for remoteneſs and cheapneſs; which being informed of, he forthwith takes horſe; and having found a good old countryman, with his wife and daughter, in Yorkſhire, whoſe diligent cares, and frugal living, whilſt young and ſtrong, had been rewarded with a moderate competence, to keep him from toiling when grown old; who, having a pleaſant and commodious habitation, diſtant from meddling and inſpecting neighbours, and room to ſpare, were very glad to take in a gentlewoman to board, being ſome company for them in their remote living, and therefore ſtood upon no rate: which ſuiting Quarll's circumſtances and wiſhes, he began to conſult on means to keep his wife there for a conſtancy: And as he well knew ſhe never would conſent, nor he be able to force her to it by violence, he applies to ſtratagems. Thus, having given her the beſt character he could to the old people for good humour, he tells them, that indeed ſhe had one failing, but that it was no wiſe troubleſome, provided one give her her way: She is very vapouriſh, and looks for great attendance: O dear! that's quality diſtemper. Well,

if

if that be all, replied the old folks, ſhe ſhall not want for any one thing. More, ſaid he, I muſt caution you of, which is this: She will ſoon be tired of her lodging, and will be for returning to London; ſo will ſeek all opportunities to ſteal away, if ſhe finds herſelf oppoſed in her deſires: Therefore 'tis beſt not to contradict her directly, but be ſure watch her narrowly, leſt ſhe gives you the ſlip. Never fear, replied the good people; we'll take care of that: She never ſhall go one ſtep alone. She is not apt to lay violent hands upon herſelf, and do herſelf a miſchief? No, no, replied he, there's no danger of that; you may truſt her alone within doors at any time, but never abroad. One thing more I muſt give you notice of; that is, when ſhe finds ſhe cannot get away, ſhe'll be for ſending letters: I charge you, let her have no paper, only at firſt; to write to me once, or twice, or ſo; and that you'll gueſs, when proper, by her railing, which will be a token of her being diſcompoſed: And, as for her diet, ſhe is ſomething dainty; but I ſee you have plenty of poultry, which ſhe loves very well. O dear Sir, anſwered the old woman, ſhe ſhall have fiſh, fleſh, and fowl, when ſhe pleaſes. We have a fine pond in the ground, well ſtocked with fiſh; and cocks and hens enough, you ſee, about the yard; and for butcher's meat, 'tis but two or three hours ride to the next town.

So Quarll having agreed, and paid one quarter, before-hand, which he promiſed to do whilſt ſhe boarded there, he returns to London, in order to fetch his wife; who having projected a greatneſs of living in the country, which ſhe was diſappointed of in town, immediately inquired into the appearance of the houſe, the handſomeneſs of the lodgings, and the gentility of the neighbours: To which queſtions Quarll took care

to anſwer ſuitable to her inclination. So, having concluded to go the next day, they went out to make proviſion of ſuch things as cannot well be had in the country; as Nantz brandy, ratafia, uſquebaugh, coffee, chocolate, and ſuch things as were neceſſary for genteel company.

Being provided with every thing, they ſet out the next day; but, as neither lodgings, houſe, or neighbourhood, anſwered her ambition, nor his commendations, he contrived to arrive in the night, that ſhe might not find the deceit; and as the good people of the houſe, according to direction, ſhewed her abundance of reſpect, giving her the title of lady, and a good ſupper being prepared: ſhe inquired no further into the matter. The next morning, Quarll, having repreſented to his ſpouſe, it would be of prejudice to him, if he ſtayed any longer from his ſcholars, having already loſt ſix days, took his leave of her, and left her in bed, it not being her uſual time to riſe: So having promiſed to be with her in a ſhort time, to ſee how ſhe liked her lodgings, he returned to London, having firſt renewed his charge to the good people of the houſe, of giving her her humour; and, above all, not to let her go out alone, nor conſent to her coming up to London; which, in a little time, he queſtioned not but ſhe would be very deſirous of.

Quarll being gone, the old people, according to their charge, were extraordinary diligent and careful in pleaſing their new lodger; who finding her ambition gratified by their obſervance, kept in that day: but the next morning, having a fancy to walk out, the young woman of the houſe took her to ſee the ground and cattle which belonged to them, as being the principal things ſhe could ſhew her; there being neither houſe nor habitation, but their own little cottage,

cottage, within ſight. She, who thought her lodgings to be in a handſome and creditable houſe, near a genteel neighbourhood, with whom ſhe might converſe; finding the reverſe of her expectations, could not conceal her paſſion at the diſappointment; but falls a railing againſt her huſband in ſuch a rage as frightened the poor young woman; who, doubting ſhe was going in one of her fits, ran home to fetch her father and mother; who, being come, were as much frightened as their daughter, at her furious countenance, the blood being ready to ſtart out of her face, and her eyes out of her head. Thus, fearing ſhe would grow unruly, each of them took hold of one of her arms, and ſo, in a manner, dragged her home; where, being come, they would have laid her upon the bed: But ſhe, who took this act of their caution for an effect of their careful attendance, told them, that indeed ſhe could not find fault with them; and that their habitation might ſuit their birth; but really it did not hers, which her huſband very well knew; and therefore ſhe never would forgive him for bringing her thither, and that he ſhould ſoon know: So deſired them to give her paper and ink, if the houſe could afford ſuch a thing.

The good people, who had been cautioned to give her her humour in that at the beginning, having none at home, ſent the boy that attended their ſheep on horſeback to the next town for them; then, leaving her to compoſe herſelf, they retired to bewail among themſelves her misfortune, which they perceived to be the effect of pride, reflecting upon the happineſs of their own condition, and the pleaſure of a contented life.

" * Now, ſaid they, ſhe has been brought up in a " city, where exceſs of pleaſure and luxury are made " the only means to arrive at content; but alas! how " widely do they miſs their aim! Their life is a con- " tinued ſeries of cares; their emulation and vanity " in faſhions, entertainments, and ſuch like, together " with their inſeparable companion, envy, only con- " tribute to make an unhappy life ſtill more miſerable. " Here this gentlewoman wants for no manner of ne- " ceſſaries to make a life comfortable, but has rather a " ſuperabundancy. Could ſhe reject that horrid pain " cauſing quality of pride, and learn a little humility, " 'tis that brings content, and ſweetens all the miſ- " fortunes of this life. How preferable is our ſtation " to hers! How ſolid is the pleaſure we enjoy in this " ſolitary habitation, compared to the trifling joys the " great ones poſſeſs in the moſt populous cities! O " happy fields, and ſilent groves! where nothing but " eternal rounds of pleaſure centre! Here no debauch- " eries, riotings, faſhions, and luxurious entertain- " ments; no envy of others good fortune, no drunken- " neſs, ſwearing and blaſpheming the mercies of the " Almighty God, ever take place, as in flouriſhing " cities; but Providence gives us all things with a " bountiful hand: In ſhort, we have all we deſire, " and more than we juſtly deſerve. Here the beau- " teous birds, joyfully hopping from bough to bough, " ſtretching their tuneful throats, and warble out me-

" lodious

* N. B. The lines marked with (") are ſet down word for word with his memoirs, for theſe reaſons, 1. I thought it a pity to alter any thing from his notions of the plea- ſures of a country life. 2. And the rather, becauſe it gives us very lively ideas of the perfect happineſs he en- joys in his ſolitude.

" lodious anthems to their great creator's praiſe; whilſt " flowery hills, in harmonious echoes, repeat the ſame " to the fruitful neighbouring vales. Here's nothing " to be ſeen or heard but univerſal acclamations of " praiſe to the great God of all things. This is the " real ſolid pleaſure; this is that makes us perfectly " happy. For how much more eligible is the com- " pany of irrational animals, or even inanimate things, " than the ſociety of men, who have diveſted them- " ſelves of all things but ſhape, whereby to diſtinguiſh " them from the moſt deformed brutes, or, indeed, " from more horrible devils? This gentlewoman " has put us in mind of our own happineſs, of which, " before her coming, we were almoſt ignorant; but " now we may ſee, that happineſs conſiſts not in " riches nor content in gaudy apparel.——But " why do we tarry here? It is not proper to leave " the gentlewoman ſo long alone, leſt, in one of her " fits, ſhe ſhould do herſelf a miſchief: Therefore " let one of us go to her." So the good woman of the houſe went to her, and, finding her in tears, uſed all poſſible endeavours to divert her melancholy, but all to no purpoſe; for ſtill ſhe was interrupted by exclamations againſt That Villain! that Rogue! her huſband. The good woman, finding that words could not prevail, thought a glaſs of ratafia might do better; ſo deſired her to comfort herſelf, and take a glaſs of her cordial; to which ſhe ſoon conſented, and after that four or five more, which had the deſired effect; for her melancholy was by this time turned into moſt violent fits of the ſpleen, and preſently into drowſineſs. The landlady, perceiving her condition, deſired her to lie down, and refreſh herſelf by taking a little ſleep: So,

laying her down upon her bed, and watching her to ſleep, retired.

After ſhe had ſlept an hour or two, ſhe awakes, in a very ſplenetic humour, and calls to know the reaſon, why pen, ink, and paper were refuſed her. Indeed, ſaid the old woman, we did not know that your ladyſhip was awake; and we did not care to diſturb you: but I'll bring it to you preſently: So went and brought it. Which ſhe no ſooner received, but ſhe began to write the following letter.

Moſt barbarous of men,

WAS you afraid that my indiſpoſition (for which you moſt deceitfully did perſuade me to leave London) *would not kill me quick enough itſelf, that you have decoyed me to an oven, the dulneſs whereof is ſufficient to make any well-bred dog pine itſelf to death; here not being a rational creature to talk to, but the inſipid folks of the hut; who being ſtript of their clumſy human ſhape, will be as complete brutes as their oxen and cows. Pray ſee that you forthwith fetch me hence, or expect to incur all the reſentment an injured wife can ſhew, as ſoon as arrived to* London, *where I ſhall ſurely come in a few days, though I was to travel all the way bareſoot.*

Yours, &c.

MARY QUARLL.

This

This letter being wrote, the good people of the houſe were in a great conſternation, whether they ought to ſend it, or not; but, after ſome conſultation about the matter, they concluded it ſhould go, leſt her huſband ſhould take it amiſs.

Quarll, who expected ſome ſuch letter from his haughty dame, as ſoon as ſhe had diſcovered the cheat, had, with a great deal of judgment prepared the following anſwer.

My dear,

IF your pride and vanity do outrun your reaſon, it is no argument my compliance to them ſhould haſten my ruin: And if you conſult your circumſtances as I do my ability, you'll not diſcommend

Your careful huſband,

PHILIP QUARLL.

And with that, one to her landlord and landlady, whom he thanked for their care of ſending the letter; but deſired they would not trouble themſelves with ſending any more, nor give her opportunity of writing, ſeeing it did but aggravate her diſtemper; and, above all things, to have a particular care ſhe ſhould not give them the ſlip, and he would take care to gratify them for their trouble.

This

This obliging letter, together with a preſent of a pair of handſome green ſtockings, and lemon-colour gloves to the daughter, did ſo win the old folks affection, that they were extreme punctual in obſerving his orders: But that to his wife had a quite different ſucceſs; for, inſtead of putting her into conſideration, it ſet her in ſuch a violent rage, as would ſcarce permit her to read it throughout: So, tearing it to pieces, ſhe ſtorms out, "Conſider my circumſtances! "vile wretch! let him behold my portion, whether "it deſerves me no better a being than a hovel! "Landlady, ſend immediately to the town, and get "me a place in the ſtage againſt to morrow; for I'll "go and tear that villain to pieces."

The good woman was not a little diſpleaſed to hear her thus deſpiſe her houſe, which was the beſt within a mile round; but as ſhe imagined it was the effect of her vapours, inſtead of vindicating her houſe, which though old and low-built, was tolerable large, and very convenient, ſhe ſeemed to acquieſce with her, wiſhing it had been better for her ſake: But as for ſending to take a place, it was then too late; for by that time a meſſenger could be got to town the office would be ſhut up; but that the next time ſhe went out, ſhe would take care a place ſhould be taken: So excuſed it for that week. In the mean time ſhe gave her her humour, being very reſpectful and obſerving; which ſuiting her pride, made her ſomething more eaſy, and in ſome meaſure diverted her raving fits; for ſhe fully depended upon going the week following, but was again diſappointed by ſome miſhap or other, and ſo from time to time; till at laſt ſhe began to doubt of their giving orders, meaning to keep her there: Thus reſolved to go herſelf; but not knowing the way, ſhe deſired ſomebody might be ſent along with her; which

they

they were ready to grant, but never could be had, being always out of the way, about ſome buſineſs or other.

This continuing for the ſpace of a month, or more and none was coming from London, ſhe began to think it was a contrivance of her huſband's to be rid of her with only paying for her board and lodging, which ſhe underſtood he had done beforehand, and agreed to do ſo during her ſtay, which, very probably, might be for her life; but reſolved to diſappoint him, by privily ſtealing away, and at a venture ſeek out the road to the next town, not queſtioning but ſhe ſhould find ſomebody as ſhe went that would direct her: But the old folks, having been warned of ſuch an enterprize by her huſband, were too vigilant to give her an opportunity of attempting it, never leaving her by herſelf from the time of her getting up to her going to her bed again: Which over-attendance convinced her of her impriſonment.

Then finding herſelf curbed in her ambition, diſappointed in her pride, and tricked out of her liberty, without hopes of being relieved; the letters ſhe ſent to her friends being intercepted; ſhe falls into a paſſion ſuitable to her caſe and diſpoſition; which, having vented upon the people of the houſe for abetting and adhering to her perfidious huſband in ſo traiterous a deed, her ſpirits being exhauſted ſo prodigiouſly with raving, that nothing but a cordial dram could ever have brought them to their uſual tone, and which ſhe by long experience knew, calls for her grand ſpecific; and, after ſhe had drank three or four refreſhing glaſſes, ſhe became more eaſy, and retired to reſt: When, having ſlept a few hours, ſhe awakes ſomething better compoſed. Thus, conſidering that all the reſentment, ſhe was capable to ſhew could not mend her condition;

ſhe

ſhe therefore concluded to make her landlord and landlady her friends, that if ſhe did not enjoy her liberty, as ſhe propoſed, ſhe might at leaſt enjoy a little more content in her confinement.

Thus ſhe reſolved, and indeed kept her reſolution a long time; laying aſide her haughty temper, and curbing thoſe violent paſſions ſhe had ſo long accuſtomed herſelf to, ſhe now began to be much more familiar and condeſcending, than what ſhe had hitherto ſhewn, to the great joy and ſurprize of the good people; who by this ſtrange alteration, were in great hopes her madneſs was wearing off; and, upon that account, were extremely induſtrious to humour her in every point; uſing her with all the good manners they were capable of: which ſhe eaſily perceiving, thought to make uſe of their credulity to her advantage; for ſhe was a woman of quick penetration: And finding how egregiouſly thoſe ignorant people had been impoſed upon, in relation to her phrenzy, ſaw the only means to regain her liberty was, to pretend a recovery. And, accordingly, by a counterfeit change of temper, endeavoured to perſuade the people into a good opinion of her; telling them, ſhe could never requite their extreme good ſervices to her during her indiſpoſition; and lamenting her own unhappineſs in being ſo troubleſome and fatiguing to perſons of ſo kind and obliging behaviour. They, in like manner, anſwered, that if their poor ſervices had contributed any thing to her eaſe or recovery, they were ſufficiently made amends for all their trouble.

Now the ſcene was intirely changed; the raving, proud, ill-natured gentlewoman became the moſt pleaſant, ſociable, and beſt natured perſon they had ever met with; And they, who juſt before conceived ſo great a diſlike to her, were now ſo delighted with her company

company and converſation, that ſhe was leſs alone than formerly, they always contriving ſome diverſion or other to drive away her melancholy, and to prevent a relapſe; hoping to ſend the welcome news of her perfect recovery to her huſband: frequently pleaſing her with odd country tales, ſhewing her all the pleaſures their fields, gardens, and orchards could afford, with many other little contrivances to paſs the time away; while ſhe endeavoured to divert them with the comical adventures of the Londoners. This ſhe endured almoſt a whole month, with all the ſeeming good-nature imaginable; but finding herſelf in no way to procure her enlargement, and rather more ſtrictly guarded than formerly, reſolved to obtain her liberty by ſtratagem, which ſhe deſigned in the following manner.

There was a ſervant in the houſe, whoſe name was Thomas, and a lively, briſk, freſh coloured young man, indeed a fellow of admirable ſenſe, and good manners: This ſpark was of a very amorous diſpoſition, well verſed in intrigues, and extremely obliging in his temper and behaviour; who, as ſoon as he ſaw Quarll's wife, began to think of his former way of living. Now this young fellow was born in London, of very mean parents, whoſe friends not being able to give him a trade, he was obliged to enter himſelf a member of the ancient and honourable ſociety of lacqueys. His firſt ſervice was to a widow gentlewoman, where he learnt all the neceſſary qualifications of his employ; but his miſtreſs being a very religious woman, going to church two or three times every day, where he was obliged conſtantly to attend her, and ſo much gravity not ſuiting his mercurial temper, ſoon obliged him to quit his poſt. But he, being an arch wag, and ſly knave, ſoon advanced himſelf to be a footman to a young nobleman. Here he began to ſhew his

genius;

genius; for his maſter, being a young gentleman very much delighted with love-adventures, frequently made uſe of him in thoſe caſes; and, finding him to be of a ſharp, ready wit, very careful, and well ſkilled in taciturnity, ſoon made him ſecret meſſenger in ordinary to all his intrigues; in which ſtation he behaved himſelf admirably well, having all the accompliſhments neceſſary for ſo weighty a truſt, viz. vigilance, diſpatch, and ſecrecy; and theſe ſo well managed, that he ſeldom failed in his deſigns. This poſt of honour he enjoyed for a long time, with great credit and reputation, and gained ſo great a ſhare in his maſter's affections, that he likewiſe made him firſt miniſter to all his affairs.

Now Tom is arrived to the very ſummit of his fortune; regaling himſelf in all kinds of pleaſure, beloved and truſted by his maſter, honoured and reſpected by his fellow-ſervants, and, in ſhort, might be ſaid to be perfectly happy. But here that jilt, which ſo long flattered him with her kind embraces, at one fatal blow moves all the means whereby he aſcended, and puſhes him from the lofty precipice to the deepeſt ſink of poverty imaginable.

Tom's maſter being a lover of variety, his curioſity prompted him to ſee the diverſion of a country wake, in order to ſtart ſome freſh game; and to that purpoſe, diſguiſes himſelf like a plain country gentleman, and equipped his man Tom in the ſame garb, on purpoſe to make him his companion in his adventure. This place where the wake was kept, was about ten miles from the nobleman's ſeat; ſo each mounted his horſe, and away they rode: When, being arrived at the town, nigh which they were to hunt their game, they both alight, and put up their horſes at an inn; and, having pulled off their boots, out they walk to-

wards

wards the place of rendezvous: As ſoon as they came within ſight of the place, they beheld the fields prettily beſpotted with different companies, at as many different diverſions. In one place a parcel of wreſtlers, eagerly contending, with broken ſhins, for a pair of gloves; in another, a company of cudgel players, with battered ribs, fighting for a laced hat; ſome at one game, and ſome at another: But Tom and his maſter, who cared for neither broken ſhins, or bloody brows, reſolved to ſeek out ſofter combatants..

After they had walked up and down the field, ſeeing the ſeveral diverſions; Well, Tom, ſays the young nobleman, where's our diverſion? Where are all our girls got to? O, ſays Tom, we ſhall be in with them preſently. Hark! I hear the noiſe of cat gut; and I warrant we find them there. So, following their ears, inſtead of noſes, they came to a moſt ſpacious dome, vulgarly called a barn; which they no ſooner entered, but Tom ſays to his maſter, here, Sir, here's variety for you; here's nymphs of all ſorts and ſizes; and, faith, of all complexions; they're all clean and neat; all fit for the game: Come, Sir, pick and chuſe: Which pretty ſmiling rogue muſt be your nymph? Come, let's ſee what you'll do; for I long to be at it. Do you long to ſee what I'll do? ſays the nobleman; why, I intend to work miracles; I ſhall make my nymph a goddeſs, before I leave her. Well then, replied Tom, I ſuppoſe I may take the privilege to make my girl a nymph, at leaſt.

While they were thus talking, they ſtood like two hawks hovering over their prey, not knowing on which to fix their fatal talons, and the ruſticks ſtaring at them with open mouth, and diſtended noſtrils, not knowing what to think of them. At length Mr. Scrape, by tuning his melodious battered fiddle, ſummons all the

the girls to readineſs, each preparing her feet for the ſport; while every Hob began to ſeize a partner, and Tom and his maſter (in the mean time, you may be ſure) were not idle: For, offering their ſervice to a couple of cherry-cheeked rogues, as Tom called them, the innocent girls very gladly accepted their offers, little dreaming their wicked intentions; but the miſchief was, the nobleman had got the girl which Tom had the moſt inclination to; which cauſed ſuch a ſecret envy in his breaſt, that became the fatal cauſe of his unfortunate diſgrace.

Now the dance was begun with great fury on both ſides; the girls ramping and tearing, and the fellows pulling, and haling, and ſhoving, and kiſſing, and tumbling like ſo many mad devils, while Tom and his maſter, being ſtrangers to ſuch kind of diverſion, ſtood like two images, and the country fellows mocking them; which Tom obſerving, and ſeeing his partner very dull, thought they ſhould never out-do him in caterwalling: Therefore, ſhrugging up his ſhoulders, and rubbing his eyes a little bit, he began to be as briſk as the beſt. The nobleman, obſerving his man Tom's alteration, thought proper to follow his example; ſo puſhing down two or three girls, fell upon them, and kiſſed them till they were almoſt ſtifled; then, hoiſting them up, extends his mouth to a full yawn, and laughs as loud, and with as great a grace, as any of them; while Tom, to ſhew his activity jumps about a yard high, always taking care to light upon ſomebody's toes; which generally put the whole company into a loud fit of laughter, except the perſon hurt; who, in compliance to the reſt, was obliged to put her mouth in a grining poſture.

Thus they became the moſt facetious companions imaginable (every one praiſing the two gentlemens

good

good humour and activity) and, in ſhort, became the wonder of the whole company. But Tom and his maſter, having tired themſelves and their partners ſufficiently, began to think of retiring, in order to refreſh their wearied limbs; and, motioning the ſame to their nymphs, the poor girls very willingly accompanied them. Now they thought themſelves ſecure of their intended ſport, and conducted them, for that purpoſe, to the inn where they had put up their horſes.

As ſoon as they were ſet down, they ordered wine to be brought, and a ſupper got ready, in order to detain and intoxicate the girls, if poſſible; and therefore they plied them very cloſe with liquor: Now Tom's partner, being a briſk lively girl, never refuſed her glaſs; but the nobleman's was of a very mild eaſy deportment, and would drink but little: He, ſeeing her temper, began to be very amorous, on purpoſe to try what that would do; but ſhe, in ſo ſweet and eaſy a manner, checked his rudeneſs, that it raiſed in Tom a moſt violent paſſion for his maſter's partner. At length, ſupper was brought to table, which was no ſooner over but night began to appear: The two girls, perceiving the time, deſired leave to go home, which the nobleman abſolutely refuſed; but Tom, thinking to make ſure of his game upon the road, conſented to go with his partner; which the other hearing, begged not to be left alone, but that ſhe might go likewiſe: The nobleman (thinking he had not brought her to the deſired pitch) as heartily deſired her to ſtay, vowing that nobody ſhould wrong or hurt her; but when the other gentleman returns (meaning Tom) they would both conduct her home: So by mere dint of argument, prevailed upon her to tarry till Tom's return.

Now

Now Tom, as ſoon as he had got from the town, began to attack his fort, which after a little parley, ſurrendered at diſcretion; ſo Tom razed the walls to the ground, entered the caſtle, and took poſſeſſion of the city: All which being tranſacted, he leaves her, promiſing to reviſit her the next day, and bends his haſty ſteps towards the inn, with a deal of impatience; muttering theſe words, as he went: "What a block-"head was I to let my maſter be too nimble for me! "Ah! fool that I was, to loſe ſo delicious a morſel, "and take poſſeſſion of ſo eaſy a fool! who, as ſoon "as aſked, conſented: When the other, with all "the pretty engaging airs, ſo modeſtly checks any "thing that looks like rudeneſs. Well, faith, "ſince it is ſo, I'll make the beſt on't, and try "whether I can't chouſe him of his partner:" So ſaid, ſo reſolved, and indeed ſo done.

For, as ſoon as Tom came in, the girl claimed their promiſe; ſaying the gentleman was ſo rude, that ſhe would ſtay no longer; deſiring them either to go home with her, or let her go by herſelf. But Tom, deſirous to renew the ſport, begged of her, with all the prevailing arguments he was capable of, to tarry; telling her, he was a little tired with the walk he had taken, and wanted to refreſh himſelf: So deſired her to ſtay, while he only took a glaſs, and he would go with her. The girl very unwillingly complied, and ſat down again. The nobleman, finding Tom had no mind to part with her, imagined he was bringing about what himſelf had ſo long endeavoured in vain; and therefore pulling out his watch, he ſtarts up in haſte, and ſays he muſt needs go, for it was paſt the time that he promiſed to be at a certain place: So tells the innocent girl he very unwillingly left her; but he hoped this would not break their new acquaintance,

for

for he would pay her a viſit in a ſhort time, deſiring to be excuſed for this time; and he believed he could prevail upon the other gentleman to conduct her home. Tom, who underſtood his meaning, follows him to the door, and there receives his charge, which was, that he ſhould bring her to a houſe they both knew, about three miles off, as ſoon as poſſible: So took his leave, mounted his horſe, and went thither, impatiently waiting for his prey.

Now Tom was extremely pleaſed with his maſter's intentions, reſolving to put the bite upon the biter; and, as ſoon as the nobleman departed, began to attack the fortification with all the artillery wine and ſoft words could ſupply him with: But the defendant, proof to battery of this kind, held out nobly a long time, and moved ſtrongly for a ceſſation of arms, deſiring leave to go home: But Tom, acquainted with the various turns of intrigues, reſolved not to loſe his game, being well aſſured he ſhould bring her to articles in a little time; and began a freſh attack, which laſted ſo long, that ſhe was obliged to cry for quarters; but it being too late for going home, Tom perſuaded her to lie there; aſſuring her, that he would ſee her well provided for; and ſo, in ſhort, ſhe bluſhingly conſented.

Thus Tom, having gained his point, orders a bed to be got ready; and then deſired his miſtreſs, who was, by this time, much overcome with wine and ſleep, to go to bed. The poor girl (ſtill between doubt and fear) knew not what to ſay, but, trembling, denies what her looks deſired; and, after a great many arguments on both ſides, ſhe reſigns herſelf intirely to him. The ſly knave, joyful of his prey, conducts his miſtreſs to bed; but as they were going, the old crafty inn-keeper cries, in mere form, I hope, Sir, that's

that's your wife, for I would by no means have any thing diſhoneſt done in my houſe. Yes, yes (ſays our rogue) you may aſſure yourſelf it is my wife, or elſe I ſhould not have offered to go to bed with her, while thee poor girl, hiding her face, ran up ſtairs as faſt as ſhe could.

They had not been long above, when the nobleman, uneaſy at their delay, returns to the inn, and inquires after the couple he left. Why, Sir, ſaid the hoſt, they're a bed. A-bed! ſays the nobleman, a-bed! Yes, anſwered he, it being too late to go home, they took up their lodgings here. What! are they a-bed together? ſaid the gentleman. Yes, ſays the inn-keeper; I left them together. The nobleman, hearing this ſtood like one thunder-ſtruck, his eyes darting lightning, and his blood all in flame; but, bridling his paſſion very coolly inquired where they lodged, ſaying he had ſome buſineſs of moment to impart to the gentleman, and he muſt that minute ſpeak to him. The inn-keeper unacquainted with his deſign, very complaiſantly conducted him to their apartment; and knocking at the door, told Tom the gentleman was returned, and wanted to ſpeak with him. Tom not being yet undreſſed, knowing his maſter's fiery temper, and the juſt reſentment he was ſure to meet with, opens the window, and out he jumps, without ſaying a word; and, having bruiſed himſelf with the fall, lay ſome time upon the ground; till, recovering himſelf a little, he precipitately got over the garden-wall, into which he had dropt from the window; and ſcours over the fields as faſt as he could, without ever looking back.

But having run himſelf out of breath, and thinking himſelf out of danger, down he ſits, reflecting upon his melancholy circumſtances. "O miſerable wretch!" ſays

ſays he, "what have I done? How dare I ever ſee "my maſter, who always repoſed his truſt in me? "And I, like a perfidious villain, to deceive him! "Certain death attends me, if I go home; and, if I "tarry here, there's nothing but beggary or ſtarving; "I have at once loſt all credit and reputation, and ſee "nothing but ruin, unavoidable ruin. O woman, "woman! curſed bewitching woman! what an infi- "nite number of miſchiefs are ye the ſource of! But "why do I exclaim againſt a woman ſo innocent, and "ſo charming, when I, the traiterous deceiver, ſought "nothing but her eternal miſery? O juſt heaven! "'twas you that ſaved her from impending ruin, and "deſervedly threw all the fatal effects upon myſelf: "Well, I'll bear them patiently; load me with all the "evils you can bring, till they mount ſo high, you "can lay no more." Raving and curſing in this manner, he tired his ſpirits, and fell aſleep.

Having ſlept ſome time, he awakes, wondering where he was: "Did I dream," ſays he, "or is it "real? No, it muſt certainly be true; I am the "moſt wretched mortal breathing; the very ſame "ruin I intended the poor innocent girl, has juſtly "fallen upon myſelf; and what is become of her I "know not, nor dare I to inquire; but I hope, as hea- "ven has hitherto protected her, it will likewiſe pre- "ſerve her from the evil intents of my maſter." Reflecting upon himſelf in this manner, he walked about till day-light, not knowing what to do, or whither to go: He was not a great way from London, deſtitute of friends or acquaintance, little or no money in his pocket, and durſt not ſee his maſter. Deſpairing in this condition, he ſaw a company of hay-makers going to work; it being ſummer-time; and reſolves to make one of their number, if poſſible; hoping by that means

to keep himſelf from ſtarving, and work his paſſage up to London.

With this reſolution he attacks the hay-makers, aſking them from whence they came, and whither they were going: Which they anſwered very civilly, telling him they came from London, and were going towards the north of England: So, being balked in his expectation of coming to London, along with them, he knew not what to do; but at laſt reſolves to go along with them, hoping to meet ſomething in his way that might make his journey pleaſant; ſo tells them his reſolution to make one amongſt them: But they, ſeeing a man genteely dreſſed petitioning for a poor hay-maker's place, took him to be only in jeſt, and told him they ſhould be glad of ſuch a companion, if he ſpoke as he thought. He proteſted to them the ſincerity of his intention, telling them his misfortunes drove him to ſuch low circumſtances. They then ſaid they ſhould be very glad to ſerve him, and that their maſter would be in the field by-and-by, and he would hire him, for he wanted hands: So he went with them, and tarried till the old farmer came, who, finding a well-dreſſed young fellow wanting an employment of that kind, aſked him a great-many queſtions, which Tom anſwered very pertinently: The farmer, therefore, taking it only as a frolick, was willing not to balk him, and ſo hired him, ſaying he might go to work that very day, if he would; but Tom, wanting a fork, told him, that, as ſoon as he could get his tools in readineſs, he would come; ſo hires a man to go to the next town to buy him one, with which, as ſoon as bought, he falls to work very pleaſantly.

Tom went with them from place to place, conforming himſelf to their cuſtoms in every point, being a very merry companion, and much beloved by his fellows:

lows: His preſent life became much pleaſanter, than his former, never inquiring after his maſter, or country girl, nor did he know what was become of them.

At laſt, it fell to his lot to be hired by the farmer he then worked for; who, ſeeing him a tractable, briſk young fellow, aſked him whether he would be his ſervant; for he then wanted one. Tom, after a little heſitation, told him he ſhould be glad of ſuch a maſter; ſo ſtruck a bargain, and hired himſelf for a year.

Tom had not been there much above half a year, before Quarll's wife came down thither, who, being a genteel London madam, reminded him of his former intrigues, and raiſed in him an inclination for her; but, being in ſo humble a ſtation, he dared not attack the haughty dame, till he might find a favourable opportunity; and ſo took all occaſions to oblige her, and was better reſpected by her than any of the others, ſhe often ſaying, that that fellow had a certain *Je ne ſcai quoi* in him that at once claimed love and reſpect. Tom, underſtanding this, thought time would certainly bring about his purpoſe; which not long after happened in this manner.

Tom, during her alteration of temper, had more liberty of converſe than before; and often diverted her with entertaining ſtories; and one day, being alone with her, opened to her the whole ſeries of his paſt fortunes and misfortunes, which ſhe heard with great attention and pleaſure; for Tom had never before diſcovered himſelf to any; but, thinking to gain credit with this gentlewoman, made her only privy to it. When Tom was gone, ſhe began to reflect on the fellow's dexterity; and, believing him well ſkilled in all kind of adventures, thought he might be a fit inſtrument for her eſcape, and reſolved to adviſe with him

about it: Accordingly the next day took an opportunity to call him to her again, when ſhe was alone, deſiring him to divert her with ſome of his merry tales, telling him ſhe was then very melancholy. Madam, ſays Tom, I am ſorry I ſhould find you melancholy; but I'll do all I can to pleaſe you. Ay, ſays ſhe, if you knew the occaſion of my melancholy, you would pity me, as well as be ſorry; but you cannot be ignorant what a priſoner I am made here, how conſtantly I am attended, and have ſcarce any thing but brutes to ſpeak to: I can aſſure you that this uſage is enough to make me as mad as the people take me to be; for I never was brought up in this manner, which my huſband knows; it is only a contrivance of his to keep me here a cloſe priſoner, if poſſible; but I'll deceive him: for if a woman's invention can find any means to eſcape this curſed place, he ſhall be ſure to ſee me in London quickly, and that to his great mortification.

The ſly rogue heard her very quietly, and thought he might now have his deſired ends: So tells her ſhe ſhould be releaſed that very night, if ſhe pleaſed, and he himſelf would accompany her to London; for he longed to be there again: She was glad to hear him ſay ſo; and aſked by what means he intended to convey her thence. O Lord! ſays he, eaſy enough; I'll tell you how: I'll take a ladder, and ſet it againſt your window, and ſo come into your room, and take your clothes, and every thing you have a mind to ſend to London, and carry them to a particular acquaintance of mine; then I'll come back and fetch you, and conduct you to the next town, which is not above five or ſix miles off, and ſtay there for the ſtage coach, and ſo both go to London together. The gentlewoman, willing to get her liberty at any rate, agreed to the propoſal, only deſiring another day to look after all her things,

and

and pack them up conveniently, becauſe ſhe would not hurry herſelf, leſt they ſhould miſtruſt, and ſtop her journey.

Tom conſented to what ſhe ſaid, and wiſhed for the approaching time; which being come, and all things in readineſs, he brings the ladder, and mounts up towards the room; while ſhe as readily delivers him, from the window all her baggage ready packed up; which Tom takes, and carries away, and preſently returns to fetch the gentlewoman; who, overjoyed to think herſelf freed from that tireſome place, gets out of the window, and began to deſcend the ladder; but being over-eager, and not uſed to enterprizes of that kind, her foot ſlipped, and down ſhe tumbles, ladder and all which Tom ſeeing, knew the conſequence, and ran away as faſt as he could, leaving Mrs. Quarll to get up by herſelf; for the ladder, in tumbling, broke the windows where the old farmer lay, and made an horrid noiſe, ſo that it ſcared the good man out of his ſleep, who got up to ſee what was the matter; and, perceiving the gentlewoman's window open, and a fellow running croſs the yard, cries out, Murder! thieves! thieves! which alarmed the whole family; ſome getting pitchforks, ſome pokers; ſome one thing, ſome another, in order to ſcare the thieves; but the old man, with his fowling piece in hand, like a noble commander, led the van, ſearching all his houſe over for thieves and to ſee what he had loſt, carefully looking into every hole and corner, not daring to advance too faſt, for fear of a ſurprize; and coming to Mrs. Quarll's room, whoſe window he had ſeen open, calls to her a long time; but hearing no anſwer, fancied ſhe was murdered, and therefore breaks open the door, and ſearches the room; but there was no Mrs. Quarll to be found; they ſtared one at another, not knowing

what to think. However, when they had examined all the houſe, they boldly ſallied into the yard to hunt the thieves there; and looking about, they perceived ſomething under the ladder, which looked like womens clothes; ſo taking it up, they pulled from under it a real woman, ſomething like Mrs. Quarll; and, looking more narrowly, perceived it to be the very ſame individual perſon, almoſt dead with the fright, and the bruiſes ſhe had received.

And now their greateſt wonder was, how ſhe came thither: The old man ſaid, he believed that ſome thieves had gotten into the houſe, and, to prevent her crying, had ſtopped her mouth, and thrown her out of the window. But, ſays another wiſeacre, how came ſhe to have her clothes on? I am ſure ſhe ought to have been a-bed. Now, adds he, I believe the devil tempted her to throw herſelf out at the window; and that muſt certainly be he you ſaw run croſs the yard ſo ſwiftly. Thus they diſputed a long time, but at laſt agreed, that ſhe ought to be carried to bed again, and have care taken of her: and ſo carried her upſtairs; and then went to finiſh their ſearch while the good old woman and her daughter undreſſed her, got her to bed, and ſat up with her all that night.

After all was finiſhed, the old man, willing to know what quantity of men he had loſt, calls a general muſter; and, finding Tom miſſing, wondered where he was got to, aſking if he lay at home that night: They told him, no; but they believed he was gone a ſweethearting. A ſweethearting! ſays the old fellow: well, let him be there always; for he ſhall never come hither again: How do I know but he has ſent the thieves to rob me, or that he is one of them himſelf? If he ever comes hither, I'll turn him about his buſineſs as ſoon as I ſee him. But Tom

underſtood

underſtood better things than to come thither again; for he knew the adventure would be blown, and then he ſhould certainly be diſcarded with diſgrace; ſo was reſolved to make the beſt of what he had got; went away, and never was heard of again.

Mrs. Quarll, as ſoon as come to her ſpeech, confeſſes the whole intrigue, and lays the blame upon her huſband; ſaying he ſent her thither to be murdered; and now he had his deſired end, only that ſhe was the unhappy cauſe of her own death. The old man, as ſoon as he knew the matter perfectly, writes to her huſband a full account of the whole ſtory: telling him he was in a fair way to loſe his wife; and that, if it ſhould ſo happen, he had no occaſion to ſend for his wife's clothes, for ſhe had before loſt them; and tells him by what means. Quarll, as ſoon as he had read the letter, was very much troubled at his wife's folly; but reſolved, if ſhe recovered, ſhe ſhould tarry ſome time without clothes, which he knew would be puniſhment enough to her pride: So writes back to them, that they ſhould take all poſſible care to reſtore her to her health, and likewiſe to prevent any thing of that kind for the future; telling them, that in a little time he would ſend her ſome clothes, and make them amends for their trouble.

Mrs. Quarll, in about a month, began to be upon the mending hand; which her huſband being informed of, reſolved to make her ſtay another month without clothes, which he knew would be a greater puniſhment than the other month of ſickneſs. But here he was miſtaken; for it was almoſt three months before ſhe perfectly recovered; who, finding that, before that time, her huſband had ſent her ſome fine new clothes, was, in great meaſure, reconciled to

him; and reſolved, during her ſtay there, to be much more eaſy in her mind than before.

The good people, whom ſhe had often ſcared with her outrageous paſſion, were very glad to ſee her ſo calm, and took that opportunity to repreſent to her the happineſs of her condition; being well attended, and as well provided with all neceſſaries, free from that ſubjection ſhe might be under, if with her huſband, whoſe croſs and ill humours ſhe would be obliged to bea with: Beſides twenty other vexations incumbent to a married life, from which ſhe was ſcreened by his being from her.

The old woman's wiſe remonſtrances, being backed with the ſudden arrival of a freſh ſupply of ſeveral ſorts of choice drams, as alſo the enſuing quarter's money for her board, and the ſeaſon rendering the country extremely agreeable, made her patiently ſubmit to continue there till the fall of the leaf; againſt which time ſhe would contrive ſome way orother to go, if her huſband did not come for her.

But Quarll, who ever ſince her being in the country, had enjoyed the uncontrouled pleaſures of a ſingle life, having no mind to interrupt them by her preſence, took care to ſecure her there; ſending her guardians now-and-then freſh charge to be watchful over her, and a ſmall preſent to encourage them to it.

But ſurly fate, who ever was averſe to his happineſs, ſuggeſts a new interruption thereto. Quarll, having given over houſe-keeping, happened to come and live at a mantua maker's of vaſt buſineſs, and reputed worth money. She was a ſingle woman, pretty handſome, but intolerable proud and conceited; which was the cauſe of her being ſtill unmarried, thinking herſelf too good for any tradeſman, or any thing below a gentleman; which ſeeing no proſpect to get, being

being courted by none, ſhe became a general man-hater: But Quarll, who was an handſome young man, and of a genteel employ, tho' not a gentleman, coming to lodge at her houſe, reconciled her to the ſex in a little time, and made her change her reſolution never to marry, heartily wiſhing he would court her: Therefore by her more than common attendance for a lodger did all ſhe could to give him invitation, but all to little ſucceſs; for Quarll, who had been already twice incumbered in the troubleſome ſtate of matrimony, and but lately rid of his laſt plague, had no mind to venture any more; ſo did not anſwer her expectation; but her love increaſing daily, without being taken notice of, ſhe was obliged to declare it to an old gentlewoman, who lodged in the next room to him; who, having doubtleſs been in the ſame condition, was, by experience, capable to give her advice

The old gentlewoman (as 'tis peculiar to them, when paſt the ſport themſelves, to love to promote it in others) took upon her the management of that affair; and from that time watched the opportunity of ſpeaking to him, which was only in the morning before he went out, or at night when he came home, being abroad all the day beſide: So, having reſolved upon it, the next morning ſhe leaves her own door open, which was oppoſite to his, waiting his coming out, to invite him to a diſh of chocolate, which ſhe had ready for that purpoſe.

Having according to her deſire, got him into her chamber, as he was drinking his diſh, ſhe feigns a fit of laughing. You wonder, ſaid ſhe, what 'tis I thus laugh at; but, I dare ſay, you'll laugh as well as I, when you know: Why, our man-hater is in love at laſt; in love up to her ears, as ſure as you are

alive. Our man-hater, Madam! ſays he: who is that? Don't you know? replied ſhe: Why, our land-lady, who has refuſed ſo many fine offers: Lord, how happily might that woman have married! She might have rode in her coach years ago; but no man was good enough for madam: This had ſuch a fault, and that another: In ſhort, none could pleaſe her: 'Tis true, indeed, ſhe is very deſerving: The worſt part of her is in the ſight, and that you know is not diſagreeable; but did you ſee what a fine body ſhe has, you would be ready to run mad for her: Surely ſhe has the fineſt leg and foot that ever woman went on; and, for a ſkin, ſhe may challenge the whole ſex: In ſhort, ſhe is fit for a king's embraces. She has ſeveral good properties beſides; and one above all, which perhaps you'll ſay is the principal; ſhe has money, and a great deal: Well, that will ſoon be diſpoſed of, I dare ſay; I wiſh I knew on whom; Sure it muſt be ſome angel; for I have heard her find fault with very handſome men that have addreſſed to her: Pray, did you ever obſerve any man to come here? He muſt be the perſon; for all her concerns are with women. Indeed, replied Quarll, I never take notice who comes: Beſides, I am ſeldom at home; ſo have not an opportunity to make obſervations. But I have, ſaid ſhe; and made it my buſineſs to mind; yet never ſaw any man in this houſe ſince I came, but you: Suppoſe you ſhould be he at laſt? O madam, there is no danger, anſwered Quarll; ſhe, who has refuſed ſo many rich matches, will hardly ſet her mind on a poor ſinging-maſter. How do you know that? replied the old lady: Love comes by fancy, and marriage by fate, and it may be yours to have her: So I would have you cultivate her love, which I could almoſt ſwear you poſſeſs; you will

will find it worth your while: Here is an agreeable woman in an extraordinary good buſineſs, a houſe well furniſhed, and I'll warrant money-bags well filled: Now, if you are diſpoſed to make your fortune, here is a fair opportunity. Quarll was ſadly puzzled what anſwer to make. His preſent circumſtance prompts him to ſooth what his condition obliges him to deny: His buſineſs ſlackens, and his charges nowiſe leſſen: His income is dubious, and expences certain; the moſt prevailing arguments to embrace the offer: But then a ſtrong obſtacle ſtarts up; a wife: But ſhe is out of the way, and as good as dead, whilſt her living is paid for, which this propoſed marriage will enable him to do, though other buſineſs failed. That objection being removed, his anſwer was, He feared that happineſs would be above his aſpiring to; which being according to the mediatreſs's wiſh, ſhe promiſed him her aſſiſtance. So he took his leave, and went about his daily affairs, leaving the management of that to her; who immediately went to inform the amorous landlady of her ſucceſs.

Quarll being returned at night, the old lady, purſuant to the buſineſs ſhe had taken in hand, follows him to his chamber, with the joyful news, that ſhe had, by her landlady's bluſhing, diſcovered what her modeſty would have concealed; that he was the man beloved; and, therefore, ſhe would not have him delay his being made happy: To which he anſwered, As ſhe had been the firſt cauſe of his happineſs, he left the accompliſhment thereof to her direction. Well, then, ſaid ſhe, if I have the ordering of it, it ſhall be done next Sunday, as being, of all the week, the moſt bleſſed day: And ſo bid him good night.

The old gentlewoman, being made ſole directreſs

of that affair, was very diligent in the accompliſhment thereof; ſo had them married on the day ſhe had propoſed. The buſineſs was done privately, but the joy it produced could not be concealed: Every body read bride in the new married wife's face; ſo that greetings daily filled the houſe; which for a month, was a reſidence for mirth; and, during the ſpace of a year, the ſeat of happineſs; peace kept the door, and plenty attended them. But churliſh fate, which ever perſecuted him, would not permit that happy ſtate to continue; and, the more to aggravate his loſs, makes love, the chief author of his bliſs, now the principal inſtrument of his ſorrow: Jealouſy, the greateſt plague that can befal a married life, infects his wife. She is upon thorns whilſt he is abſent, and uneaſy when preſent, with the fears of what he had done abroad: A diſcontented mind often urges the utterance of vexatious words, and breeds jarrings, enemies to peace; which, being often diſturbed, leaves her abode, which is immediately taken up by ſtrife, and is commonly attended with ruin, the decreed influence of poor Quarll's ſurly fate. Buſineſs falling off from both their hands, makes them negligent of the little they have: The huſband diverts his cares abroad, whilſt the wife drinks away her ſorrow at home. Thus money growing ſcant, credit muſt be pledged; which, being not redeemed, expoſes the owner to diſgrace, which is commonly the poor man's lot.

The mercer and ſilkman, with whom his wife dealt before ſhe was married, having received money but once ſince her marriage, and ſeeing her diſcontent, imagined her huſband (who appeared ſomething too airy for one of her ſedate years) was the occaſion thereof, by his extravagant ſpending what ſhe, with much

much care and frugality, had ſaved, arreſted him, without giving him notice; leſt, being warned, he ſhould get away what ſhe might have left, and then abſcond.

Quarll, who till then had kept ſecret his being in the guards, where he continued, to ſcreen him from thoſe debts his eloped wife might contract, is now obliged to let it be known, to keep himſelf out of goal.

His proud wife, who thought men of the beſt and genteeleſt trades inferior to her merits, ſeeing herſelf at laſt married to one, whoſe ſtation was looked upon to be as odious as that of a common bailiff, fell into ſuch a paſſion that it caſt her into a violent fit; from which being recovered, ſhe flies out of the houſe in a great fury, ſwearing by all that was good, She would no more live with a foot ſoldier; ſo left him in a ſad confuſion: Yet he ſtayed in the houſe, hoping ſhe would, when cooler, conſider of it, and be reconciled.

But great was his ſurprize, when next morning, inſtead of his wife's coming according to expectation, a judgment is ſerved upon the goods of the houſe, at the ſuit of an upholſterer; ſo the houſe being intirely unfurniſhed, he was obliged to ſeek new lodgings, where he continued a full quarter, without hearing of his wife.

Quarll, hoping his wife had left him in good earneſt, indulges himſelf with the thoughts of being a third time delivered from the greateſt incumbrance that can involve a man: wondering how he could ſo often fall into the ſame ſnare: Three wives, ſaid he, in three years! and every one equal plagues, though of a different nature! The firſt a whore, of whom I was moſt luckily rid by accident: The ſecond, a proud,

lazy,

lazy, indolent creature; ſhe by ſtratagem is ſecured: And the third a conceited jealous wretch; to her oſtentation I owe my deliverance. Well, now I am once more free, I'll take care how I hamper myſelf again: So makes a ſtrong reſolution, let what would happen, to live ſingle from that time ever after.

But his reſolution, though ever ſo ſtrong, cannot avert fate's irrevocable decree: A fourth wife is allotted him, which will bring upon him more vexation and trouble, than he has yet gone through; his peace will not only be broken, and his eaſe diſturbed, but his life muſt be in jeopardy.

One evening that he was diverting his colonel, and the reſt of his club, with ſinging at the tavern, as he uſually did once a week, the landlady (who was then in company) much praiſed his voice and ſkill: the gentlemen took that opportunity to propoſe a match between Quarll, who went for a batchelor, and her, being a widow: all the company liked the propoſal, and earneſtly urged on the match.

Quarll, being a briſk, handſome, genteel young man, which qualifications have a vaſt aſcendant upon the ſex, eſpecially on widows, made a conſiderable impreſſion upon the hoſteſs; who, being already above forty, was willing to intermix her ſupernumerary years with thoſe of an huſband of a leſſer age: So, turning to jeſt what ſhe heartily wiſhed to be in earneſt, anſwers, in a joaking manner, that Mr. Quarll doubtleſs had, before that time, made a better choice; ſo would hardly agree to their propoſal. A better choice! ſaid the gentlemen, I deny that: here's a handſome jolly woman, a noble houſe well-accuſtomed, a cellar well ſtocked with good wine, and bags, doubtleſs well filled with money: I ſay he cannot make

make a better choice, nor ſhall he make any other; ſo here's to its good ſucceſs: thus he drinks to her, who, in a joaking way, puts it about. The glaſs having been round, now, Mr. Quarll, ſaid the colonel, let us have a love-ſong to conclude the matter.

Quarll, who thought the gentlemen had been but in jeſt, in his heart wiſhed it could turn to earneſt. The notion of a good eſtabliſhment, and proſpect of a conſiderable advantage, having blanched over thoſe great obſtacles his preſent low circumſtances, and elevated condition, made him overlook, he did all he could to forward what had been propoſed: ſo having, according to requeſt, given the landlady a love ſong, he goes and ſalutes her with an hearty kiſs; who, ſmiling, aſked him, whether he thought ſhe was to be purchaſed with a ſong? to which he replied, the ſong was only to expreſs the thoughts of his heart, which he offered to purchaſe her love. Indeed, ſaid ſhe, in a pleaſant manner, I do not know what your thoughts may be; but I never heard more agreeable expreſſions. Well then, widow, ſaid theſe gentlemen, you cannot, in gratitude and good manners, but anſwer them kindly. Indeed, gentlemen, ſaid ſhe, I can ſay no more, but that they are mighty pretty words, and charmingly ſung. Well then replied the colonel, I'll ſay the reſt for you. The lover having expreſſed his paſſion in ſo ſoft terms, and engaging a way, you cannot, without doing violence to your good-nature, deny him what he requeſts in ſo melting a manner; nor ſhall; I ſay the word: Which was confirmed by all the company. To which ſhe making no anſwer, it was taken for granted. So the marriage being concluded on, the next day was fixed upon for the performance thereof; being reſolved not

to

to adjourn till it was over, they beſpoke a ſplendid ſupper, and ſo ſpent the night merrily.

The wedding was kept all the week, during which time, every gentleman was profuſe in his expences, for an encouragement to the new-married couple, whoſe trade increaſed daily.

Their proſperous beginning ſeemed to promiſe an happy life, living in love and peace at home, and being in good repute and credit abroad; but the ſame fate, which all along haunted poor Quarll, is ſtill at his heels: His bliſs was but a blaſt. His eloped wife unfortunately happened to go by as he was going out: ſhe had him immediately in her eye, which as ſpeedily conveyed him to her heart: The addition which a charming new ſuit of clothes he then had on, made to his natural handſomeneſs, put out of her mind the cauſe of that diſdain ſhe had conceived for him, and turns it into a more paſſionate love than ever: ſhe cannot live any longer from him; ſhe muſt have him with her at any rate, and will not reſt till ſhe finds out his lodgings; from whence ſhe reſolves to waſh all ſorrow away with her tears, and ſettle him again in her arms. So ſhe ſtrait goes to the tavern ſhe ſaw him come out of, ſuppoſing it might be a houſe he conſtantly uſed, on purpoſe to inquire where he lodged.

The new wife, who was then in the bar, to whom ſhe applied, perceiving in her ſome ſort of diſorder, was very inquiſitive to know her buſineſs; in which the poor woman refuſing to ſatisfy her, ſhe told her that he lived there, and that ſhe was his wife; and therefore the fitteſt to know her concern. At theſe moſt dreadful words, ſhe falls, like one thunder-ſtruck, on the ground, deprived of all her ſenſes; and, for a conſiderable time, lies as though bereſt of life.

This

This dull ſcene turns the new wife's paſſion into commiſeration; and ſhe pities that misfortune which in her mind ſhe before condemned as a crime. This ſaid ſhe, is a true ſign of love, which a harlot is not capable of: I cannot blame her for loving him, but rather condole her misfortune. So, having ordered fair water and hartſhorn drops to be brought, gave her ſome in a glaſs of water, which in a ſmall time fetched her a little to life; who, recovering, cried out, had I not been ſo bewitched as to go from him, he would not have left me. Theſe words in a moment turned the officious condoler into a revengeful rival, who immediately imagined ſhe had lately lived with him as a miſtreſs, and, doubtleſs, would endeavour to do the ſame again: ſo, giving her hand (which ſhe kindly held before) a ſcornful toſs from her, why, you vile woman, ſaid ſhe, would you have him to live for ever in whoredom? you judge me wrong, madam, replied the poor afflicted woman; I am his lawful wife: ſo produces her certificate (which ſhe happened to have about her:) which cauſed almoſt as much diſorder in the beholder, as ſhe herſelf was lately in.

Having recovered her ſpeech, which the late ſurprize had obſtructed, ſhe aſked her, in a violent paſſion, why ſhe had been ſo baſe as to give him the opportunity to come and cheat her, by her leaving him; for ſhe was his wife alſo? To which ſhe anſwered, that ſhe could not juſtify her going from him, tho' indeed ſhe had great provocation, he not proving the man ſhe took him to be. What! replied ſhe in the bar, was he not man enough for you? I think you are very hard to pleaſe. However, ſince the deceit made you leave him, why do you diſturb yourſelf about him? He has not deceived me, unleſs it be in having a wife

wife before: But as you left him of your own accord, he had no more to do with you. No! replied she, in a passion; but he shall find, and so shall you, that I have to do with him: So went away.

It being then about noon, his usual time to come home from market, she went into a public-house opposite to the tavern, there to wait his return, which was a little after. As soon as she saw him, she gave him a call over.

The sudden and unexpected sight of the only obstacle to the happiness he then enjoyed, was most terrible shocking to him: He wished he had met with death to have missed her; but to no purpose: She had him in her eye, and was fully resolved to have him in her arms ere she went; and as he did not come as quick at her call as her impatience requires, she attempts to go over to him: but Quarll, who knew her fiery temper, was afraid she should break out into a passion in the street; which would have exposed him, and brought it to his new wife's knowledge, being near home: So hastens over to the house she was in, to prevent her coming: and, judging his beginning to upbraid her with her elopement would, in some measure, moderate her railing at him, he tells her, as he enters the room, I hope, madam, you have, by this time, found a man, more to your mind. This was sufficient to provoke a milder temper to reproach him with his adulterous marriage, of which she was too certain; hers is but a fault, but his a crime: But as reproaches are not proper means to advance a reconciliation, which was her intent, she bridles her passion, and forces her nature to a submission; so throws herself at his feet, and falls a weeping; owning she had committed a fault, for which she heartily repented, and promised to atone by her future behaviour; calling

ing heaven to witneſs her chaſtity during her moſt unhappy ſeparation.

Quarll, being of a compaſſionate temper, was ſoon made flexible by her tears: So takes her up by the hand, who as ſoon fell into his arms, uncapable of ſpeaking for weeping; but Quarll, who was in haſte to be gone, being waited for at home, it being about his time of dinner, complied with the poor afflicted woman's crying and ſobbing, whoſe chief requeſt was, that he would only ſee her home that time; which he preſently granted, to be quit of her: So ordered a coach to be called.

His new wife at home, being uneaſy at his ſtaying beyond his time, came to the door to look whether ſhe could ſee him come. At that moſt unlucky time he was handing his other wife into the coach; which ſhe unfortunately ſpying, ran over, as ſwift as a hawk flies after his prey, and pulls him back by the lappet of his coat, as he was ſtepping into the coach after her: The diſorder this ſecond ſurprize put him in, obliged him to go again into the houſe he juſt came out of, where ſhe immediately followed him, raving and railing as much as the provocation and her paſſion did allow, leaving in the coach his former wife; who, by that ſecond terrible ſurprize, was again ſtruck ſpeechleſs, and like one bereft of ſenſe.

The coachman, having waited ſome time, being impatient, calls in the houſe, deſiring the gentleman to make haſte, or elſe to allow him for waiting; at which, the new wife comes out in a violent paſſion, and bids him be gone, for he was not wanted. What ſhall I do with the gentlewoman in my coach? ſaid he; you had beſt take care of her; ſhe is not well; or tell me where I ſhall carry her. Carry her to the devil, an you will, ſaid ſhe; and ſo went in. You

may

may carry her there, replied the ſurly coachman; you beſt know the way: So goes to the coach, and ſhakes her 'till ſhe came to herſelf: Then, taking her up in his arms, I am bid to carry you to the devil, ſaid he; but I believe you are able to go yourſelf; ſo I'll ſet you down here, that you may take your own time. Having ſet her down, he then drives away, There being a milliner's ſhop juſt by, ſhe goes in, deſiring leave to ſit a while, 'till ſhe was able to go. She had ſcarce been there three minutes, but ſhe ſees her huſband handing his new wife over, very complaiſantly; which ſo exaſperated her, that ſhe fully reſolved upon revenge; chuſing he ſhould be hanged, rather than her rival ſhould enjoy him: So went directly, and took out a warrant, which ſhe immediately ſerved, and had him before a juſtice of the peace, who committed him forthwith to Newgate.

The following ſeſſions happening to be extraordinary great, by the vaſt number of criminals, his trial, and ſeveral more, were put off 'till the next; ſo that he was confined at the time he uſed to ſend the money for his wife's board in the country: And, not daring to employ any acquaintance in that affair, leſt they ſhould inqure into the occaſion of his ſending that money; he deſired one, who often came to viſit a priſoner, to do him that favour; which he readily promiſed, but did not perform: So that the people in the country, who were uſed to be paid a quarter beforehand, were a quarter in arrear: Which, with the boarder's preſſing importunity to come up to London, made them at laſt reſolve upon it; where being arrived, they immediately inquired after the unfortunate Quarll, whoſe impriſonment they ſoon heard of, as alſo of the cauſe thereof.

This did not a little exaſperate the already ſufficiently-

ently provoked inquiſitreſs; who preſently imagining, with good reaſon, that his confining her in the country was merely for that intent, reſolved to proſecute him according to the utmoſt rigour of he law; wondering who that good perſon was that had him apprehended: So went and conſulted her friends, who adviſed her not to let her huſband know of her being in town till his trial came on; and then ſhe ſhould know the proſecutor, and, at her own diſcretion, back the proſecution.

The mean time, his firſt wife, who had lately been diſmiſſed (the knight who kept her being not long ſince married to a vaſt fortune) having heard of Quarll's being in Newgate, went ſtrait to viſit him. Her grief and his ſurprize at her coming, ſtopped, for ſome time, the utterance of both their minds: At laſt Quarll, who had a juſt reaſon to tax her as the author of his preſent misfortune, reproached her with her leaving him, which was the original cauſe thereof. The innocent, yet guilty Sally, whoſe inclination, diſpoſition, and retolution, had been violated, related the diſmal account of her fatal raviſhment; and pleaded her cauſe with ſuch a prevailing eloquence, as new-kindled his former love, and made him (tho' the ſufferer) give it on her ſide.

Being thoroughly reconciled, and having ſpent ſome hours in expreſſing both their griefs, they at laſt parted, after a thouſand cordial embraces; and as ſhe was enabled, by the ſettlement the knight had made upon her, ſhe ſupplied him with money and neceſſaries during his confinement in Newgate; and was with him conſtantly every day, almoſt from morning till night; and, when he was called upon his trial, ſhe attended in the court, more concerned than if ſhe herſelf had been arraigned.

The

The ſeſſions being commenced, he was firſt called to the bar: His indictment being read, he deſired to be heard by his counſel; which was granted. The deponet having proved her marriage, required the priſoner at the bar ſhould be obliged to live with her, or allow her a ſufficient maintenance, as being his firſt wife; at which ſhe whom he kept in the country ſtarts up: That belongs to me, ſaid ſhe; I am the firſt wife: So produces her certificate. A third wife appearing, ſtartles both the judges, and the priſoner who thought her ſecure.

Sally, who till then had been ſilent, ſeeing the priority of marriage ſo much pleaded for, thought it might be worth her while to claim it, being her right, which ſhe may chance to turn to the priſoner's advantage; ſo addreſſing to the bench, My lords, ſaid ſhe, I did not think to apply for juſtice; but, ſeeing theſe women contending for that which belongs to neither of them, I think myſelf obliged to claim my right: I am the firſt wife, and pleaſe your lordſhips. How! a fourth wife, and indicted but for two! ſaid the judges, in a great ſurprize. Why, my lords, replied an old ſurly judge upon the bench, if truth be known, he has half a ſcore; I ſee it in his looks: Theſe ſmock-faced young fellows are ſo admired by the women, that they have not power to refuſe any thing. Sally, who thought to do the priſoner ſervice, in taking the privilege of firſt wife into her own hands, finding the ſucceſs of her good intent quite reverſed heartily repented appearing, and would have withdrawn, but that the judges told her ſhe was now become the proſecutrix, and was obliged to go on in the proſecution. This cauſed ſuch a diſorder in her, who imagined ſhe ſhould be the unfortunate occaſion of his being caſt, that ſhe was ready to ſwoon. Quarll's counſel, perceiving

ceiving her diſorder, imagined it might proceed from a regret of the miſchief ſhe had done; ſo put her in a way to invalidate her depoſition: Now, madam, ſaid the counſel, I very much queſtion whether you can make your aſſertion good: Pray produce your certificate; you can do us no hurt elſe. Sally, overjoyed to hear that, ſaid ſhe had none; chuſing to undergo the greateſt diſgrace, rather than he ſhould come to the leaſt hurt. I thought as much, ſaid the counſel. Well, well, replied the ſurly judge, ſhe may have loſt it: Where was you married, child? At Chatham, my lord, I think, anſwered ſhe, very much diſcountenanced. At Chatham, did you ſay? replied the counſel: I doubt yours has been a ſailor's wedding, over a pot of drink; a man's wife till the next voyage, and any body's when he is gone. Your lordſhips ſee how the caſe ſtands. Yes, yes, anſwered a judge; if ſhe is his firſt wife that way, I dare ſay he is not her firſt huſband, by many. So ſhe was hiſſed out of the court. Then the judge addreſſing to the next pretender, I hope, ſays he, yours will not prove a ſailor's wedding, as her's did. A ſailor's! No, my lord, replied the ſecond wife; I have witneſſes enough to mine: My lady Firebraſs, with whom I lived, and her two daughters, ſaw me fairly married in St. Martin's church. How came it, ſaid the judge, you did not ſue him before he married the third wife? You ſhould have prevented his cheating any other poor woman. Why, my lord, ſaid ſhe, I knew nothing of it; he kept me a priſoner in the country, at this good woman's houſe, where he decoyed me, under pretence of being careful of me: I muſt go into the country, for a month or two, to take the air! but when he had me there, there he kept me ever ſince, charging the people of the houſe not to ſuffer me to come

up

up to London, nor yet to go out; pretending I was mad, becauſe I complained I was not well. A very pretty device! replied the old judge. Yes, my lord, cried out all the women in the court (who were come in great numbers to hear a trial about a rape committed by a quaker upon a maid of fifty years of age) and a very bad precedent, if not ſeverely puniſhed: Should this be ſuffered, a poor wife will not dare to be out of order, or complain, in hopes to be made much of, for fear her huſband, under colour of giving her the pleaſure of the country air, ſhall, when he has got her there, confine her, and ſo marry whom he pleaſes at London.

The judges, to quell their clamour, were obliged to call to them, and promiſe them it ſhould be no precedent; and that they might be ſick at will, and groan at their pleaſure, and alſo accept of their huſband's kindneſſes when offered.

The court being ſilenced, the proceedings went on: And ſeveral of the judges having been ſpoken to by ſome of Quarll's particular friends, who were related to ſome of them, they were more favourable in their judgment, all but the old ſurly judge with whom no intereſt had been made.

The three wives then preſent having proved their marriage, the priſoner at the bar was aſked, What he had to ſay in his own defence?

Quarll, who thought his wife in the country was ſecure from coming againſt him, not having given his counſel inſtructions concerning her, was obliged to plead himſelf: My lords, ſaid he, the firſt deponent againſt me being run mad, and therefore unfit for human ſociety, I was obliged to think of ſome retirement for her, as 'tis neceſſary for people in her caſe. Unfit for human ſociety! replied the ſecond wife, in

a

a great fury; and was going on in the ſame temper, but was bid to be ſilent, and he to proceed: So, my lords, ſaid he, I propoſed the country, as the moſt pleaſant and wholeſome place, as alſo that which ſuited her indiſpoſition beſt, being always ambitious to imitate the quality, who commonly go into the country in the ſummer; which made her accept the offer: There, my lords, I boarded her with very honeſt and ſufficient people, in a handſome, creditable and pleaſant houſe: A pleaſant houſe! replied ſhe; a perfect hovel. There, my lords, I provided her every thing ſhe could want or deſire, as her landlady, here preſent, can juſtify. His council, who, by what he had ſaid, had taken ſufficient hints to proceed, took the plea out of his hand, and went on: Ant pleaſe your lordſhip, ſaid he, ſince by her madneſs——My madneſs! ſaid ſhe, interrupting the council; I deſire, my lords, this good woman (with whom I have lived many years) may be ſworn, whether ſhe in all that time, did ſee or diſcern the leaſt ſymptoms of madneſs in me. Indeed, replied the old woman, I have often ſeen you in the vapours; but I cannot ſay I ever ſaw you, what they ſay, raving mad, but once. My lord, ſaid the priſoner, I beg this letter, which ſhe ſent me a week after ſhe was there, may be read; and then your lordſhips may judge whether I do her wrong.

Orders being given from the bench, the letter was read. The old woman hearing her houſe ſo deſpiſed, "where a well-bred dog would run mad, if kept in;" and then her huſband and herſelf compared to oxen and cows, was not a little diſpleaſed: My houſe, Madam, ſaid the old woman, is not ſo deſpicable neither, as that comes to: I'm ſure there's hardly a better, or more convenient within ten miles round it. As for the room you lay in, no gentlewoman, in her right

ſenſes, but would be contented with, eſpecially in the country; I muſt be obliged to ſide with your huſband there: And for my huſband and me to be reckoned no better than brutes, you have little reaſon to ſay ſo: for no woman can be uſed with more humanity than you have been: and as for your being confined, you never were ſhut up any where, but always had the liberty of walking about our ground; only indeed I would not conſent you ſhould trudge to London, as you often did offer to do. The old woman having done ſpeaking, Quarll's council put it to the bench, whether the proſecutrix ought to be accounted in her right ſenſes. The judges having given their opinion that ſhe was frantic; the old judge being diſpleaſed at their anſwer, aſked them, whether a man or woman's being frantic (which but few in this town are more or leſs) do impower either to marry again; and if they will allow that, why did he marry a third; The ſecond is not mad. The ſecond, replied the council, eloped, my lord, and was from her huſband half a year; and 'tis to be queſtioned, whether ſhe would ever have come near him, had ſhe not accidentally found this opportunity to trouble him. 'Tis a plain caſe, my lord, ſaid another judge, the priſoner is guilty of the crime he ſtands indicted for: Yet I don't ſee but that there is room for favour. His conſtitution may perhaps require a woman for the maintainance of his health, and his inclination is averſe againſt vile women: Beſides, my lord, we don't hear that he did cohabit or correſpond with more than one at a time; and never ſought a ſupply till he was deſtitute. In my opinion, my lord, he may be favoured a little. The ill-natured judge told them very ſurlily, that the fact was plain, and that he was tried according to the laws of his country; and muſt expect

to

to ſuffer the penalty of thoſe laws: But he could ſee no room for favour, unleſs his majeſty (Charles the Second) would graciouſly be pleaſed to ſhew it him; and it was intirely out of his own power: So ſums up the evidences, and refers it to the jury.

The jury went out accordingly: and, after having ſtayed ſome time, brought in their verdict, death. Sally, who was juſt by, no ſooner heard the terrible news, but fainted away, and was obliged to be carried out of court: The three wives likewiſe went away, upbraiding and reproaching one another with being the fatal cauſe of loſing their huſband, wiſhing one another never to be relieved by man; and ſo parted: But Sally, as ſoon as recovered, went back to the priſoner again, and ſtaid with him till the court broke up; and then was allowed a coach to carry him to Newgate, and attended him there all that night.

As ſoon as the keepers came in the morning, he calls for pen, ink, and paper, which was brought him; and wrote the following letter to his colonel:

May it pleaſe your honour,

I AM now under the terrible ſentence of condemnation; I need not tell you upon what account, my caſe being too well known to the world already: but as you have beſtowed ſo many particular favours upon me hitherto, this emboldens me once more, in this my extreme neceſſity, to rely upon your goodneſs. 'Tis true my merit cannot lay claim to the leaſt mark of your eſteem; but 'tis your generoſity prompts me to beg my life at your

hands, which if you preſerve, ſhall always be devoted to your ſervice, by

Your unfortunate humble ſervant,

PHILIP QUARLL.

As ſoon as he had finiſhed he delivers it to his dear-beloved Sally, and deſires her to carry the ſame to his colonel: Sally, joyful to ſerve him, takes the letter, and away ſhe flies. Being come to the houſe, ſhe delivers the letter to the colonel; who having opened and read it, told her, that ſhe might aſſure him, he would do all that lay in his power to ſerve him: So Sally, expreſſing her gratitude, retired to carry the news to her huſband: When ſhe came to the priſon ſhe found him reading very ſeriouſly, leaning upon his hand, with tears in his eyes: She ſtood ſome time to look at him: But finding he never ſtirred his head, nor moved his eyes, ſhe went ſoftly up to him, and ſpoke to him: He no ſooner heard her voice, but he ſtarts, and looks like one juſt awoke from a dream; and then burſt into tears, and could not ſpeak a word; which Sally ſeeing, could not forbear weeping; and fell upon his neck, deſiring him with all tenderneſs to ſtop the torrent; for ſhe had ſome joyful news to tell him. What joyful news, ſays he, can you bring a man under my wretched circumſtances? Can any thing elevate the mind whom heaven itſelf has contrived to depreſs? Am not I the very out caſt and ſcorn of Providence? Have not I been unfortunate from my infancy? And why will you ſtill add to my miſery; 'tis you that now make me wretched: Had you not ſo compaſſionately aſſiſted me in this my diſmal calamity with ſo much tenderneſs, I then willing-

ly

ly ſhould have left this hateful world, without thinking of you: But why muſt I make you the wretched partner of my misfortunes? 'Tis that adds to my uneaſineſs. O that I had not ſeen you in theſe my laſt moments! Sally, interrupting him, ſaid, come, talk not of laſt moments; you may yet enjoy many happy years; your colonel has promiſed to uſe his utmoſt endeavours to preſerve your life. I don't flatter myſelf with any thing of that kind, ſays he, but if ſuch a thing ſhould happen, I am fully reſolved not to tarry long in England, which has brought upon me ſo many dire miſhaps.

The colonel was as good as his word; for he loved Quarll extremely well: And therefore, as ſoon as Sally was gone, he orders his coach to be got ready, and away he poſts to my lord Danby, who had a great influence at court at that time, and was his particular friend. When he came thither, his lordſhip was not ſtirring; ſo he waited till he got up; who, as ſoon as come down, cries out, ſo colonel, what brings you here ſo ſoon? Did you come to breakfaſt with me; the colonel ſeeing him ſo facetious and pleaſant, told him his meſſage. My lord, as ſoon as he heard it, anſwered, that upon his honour, he certainly would grant his requeſt; and made him ſtay to breakfaſt with him.

As ſoon as breakfaſt was over, he took his leave of his lordſhip, and away he comes to bring the tidings to Quarll, whom he found alone, Sally having juſt left him. The colonel told him, he was ſorry to ſee him there, with other compliments uſual in ſuch caſes; and related to him the ſucceſs he had with my lord Danby: So deſired him to be of good chear. Quarll fell at his feet, and expreſſed his gratitude in the moſt thankful terms imaginable; telling him, his

life ſhould always be at his ſervice. His colonel, raiſing him up, told him he was very well ſatisfied; and, after a little more converſation, left him.

Sally, in the mean time, was not idle; for ſhe went and bought a rich piece of plate, and preſented it to the recorder, that he might favour Quarll in his report to his majeſty; which had the deſired effect: For, when the dead warrant came down, he was excluded: and in a few day's after, my lord Danby procured his majeſty's moſt gracious pardon; which his colonel brought him with great joy.

Quarll being diſcharged out of Newgate, reſolved not to tarry long in England; and told his beloved Sally, that he muſt now leave her, for he had made a vow not to tarry in Britain. She endeavoured to diſſuade him from his intentions; but, finding it to no purpoſe, deſired ſhe might accompany him. He aſked her, why ſhe deſired to be wretched, telling her, he was doomed to perpetual miſery: But ſhe was reſolutely bent to follow him where-ever he went; and accordingly ſold what the Knight had ſettled upon her, in order to carry the money with her.

Quarll hearing of a ſhip bound for the South Seas, which in her return was to touch at Barbadoes, the captain of her having been firſt mate of the ſhip to which Quarll had formerly belonged; this encouraged him to venture the voyage. Accordingly, he went to the commander, in order to agree with him about it. The captain, after ſome talk began to call to mind their former acquaintance, but wondered to ſee him ſo much altered as to his condition; Quarll being very handſomely dreſſed, and his behaviour much better poliſhed than formerly: So deſired him to give him an account how this ſtrange alteration

teration had happened, and by what means he came to this good fortune. Good fortune! do you call it? ſays Quarll; I ſuppoſe then you look upon men by their outward appearance: But, did you know the world as well as I do, you would judge the contrary. Now, adds he, I'll give you a ſhort account of my paſt life; and then I'll leave you to ſay whether I am not rather the perfect ſcorn and mock of fortune: So related to him his paſt misfortunes; which Quarll told him in ſo moving a manner, that it almoſt drew tears from the captain's eyes. As ſoon as he had made an end, well, ſays the captain, I thought that my way of living brought upon me more troubles than land-men are ſubject to! for, ſince I ſaw you, I have been ſhip-wrecked twice; once upon the coaſt of Guinea, where I loſt the ſhip and cargo, and but five men ſaved; the other time, homeward bound from the Eaſt-Indies, a violent ſtorm aroſe, and drove us upon the coaſt of France, where, with great difficulty we caſt anchor, in order to refit our ſhip, which was very much damaged in the late ſtorm: But about twelve o'clock the ſame night we came thither, a moſt violent hurricane blew in upon us, broke our cables and drove us aſhore; where again I loſt the ſhip and cargo, but all the men ſaved: Thus I think I have been unfortunate; but ſince they are paſt never think of them: We ſhall have a pleaſant voyage; and as you ſay you have a mind to reſide at Barbadoes, where I muſt touch in my return, I'd have you lay out your money in the woolen manufacture, and cutlery-ware, which are very good commodities in thoſe parts. Quarll thanked him for his advice, and parted with him.

Away then he goes to Sally, and told her what he had been doing, and whither he intended to go. Sal-

ly anſwered, what was his pleaſure ſhould be hers; and that ſhe would be a partner in his fortunes and misfortunes, go whither he would. So Quarll went and bought the goods which the captain adviſed him to, and ſent them on board; and ſoon after followed with himſelf and wife.

They had not been long at ſea, before his darling Sally fell ſick and died, to his inexpreſſible grief; wiſhing ten thouſand times he had died with her. He began to be extreme melancholy, took no reſt, and would eat no victuals. The captain was afraid that he would die alſo; and did all he could to divert him; but was a long time before he could bring him to his former temper.

They ſailed on with a ſide-wind for the ſpace of a month; though, it changing full in their teeth, and very high withal, obliged them to caſt anchor, in order to lie by till the wind did ſerve; but ſeeing themſelves made upon by a pirate, they were obliged to weigh their anchor, and make the beſt of their way before the wind, in order to avoid being taken by thoſe infidels, who purſued them from four of the clock on Friday morning, 'till ten at night the following Sunday; at which time there aroſe a ſtorm; the ſky looked very black, the wind being at north-weſt, and clouds began to riſe and move towards them, having hung all the morning in the horizon: So that they took in their top-ſails, and furled their main-ſail: The ſea ran very ſhort, and broke in upon their deck: However, they put right before the wind, and ſailed ſo for three weeks, when they made Cape Horne: They had no ſooner got round the Cape, but the wind veered to the ſouth, and it fell flat calm; which continued for two days, when the wind ſprung up at ſouth-weſt, and they ſcudded before the wind very

ſwift,

ſwift, and made an iſland whoſe name none of them knew, the ſhip having never been on the coaſt before; but there they found wood, water, and herbs of ſeveral ſorts, ſome ſeals and ſea-fowls. Here they refreſhed themſelves for four days; and then weighed anchor, the wind being fair at full ſouth, and traded at ſeveral ports on the coaſt of Peru, Chili, and Mexico. From Port Aquapulco they ſailed, having a freſh breeze, at N. N. E. They had not ſailed above one day, before the wind veered to ſouth-weſt, and blew a violent gale of wind; and there being a great ſea, ſo that their ſhip took in a great deal of water, the wind continuing two days increaſing to a very great ſtorm, which held for one day and two nights more; during which time they perceived themſelves near ſome rocks. The ſtorm rather increaſing, and it growing dark, they deſpaired of ſaving the ſhip; and as the main-yard could not lower, the ſhip's tackling being diſordered by the violence of the ſtorm; Quarll, being bold and active, took a hatchet which tumbled about the deck, and ran up the ſhrowds, in order to cut down what ſtopt the working of the main-yard; but, by that time he was got up, there came a ſea which daſhed the ſhip to ſhatters againſt the rock; and with the violence of the ſhock, flung Quarll, who was aſtride upon the main yard on the top of the rock; where, having the good fortune to fall in a cliſt, he was hindered from being waſhed back again into the ſea, and drowned, as every-body were that belonged to the ſhip.

Quarll in a diſmal condition, remained the ſucceeding night in the cliſt, being continually beaten with the daſhing back of the ſea, and being both bruiſed and numbed, pulled of his clothes which were dropping wet, and ſpread them in the ſun; and being o-

ver-fatigued, lays himſelf down on the ſmootheſt place of the rock he could find, being quite ſpent with the hardſhip he had undergone, and ſlept while his clothes were drying.

His ſleep, though very profound, was not refreſhing: The danger he had been lately in, ſo ran in his mind, that grim death was ever before his eyes; which conſtantly diſturbed his reſt: But nature, who wanted repoſe, would be ſupplied, though it be broken. Having ſlept a few hours, he awakes almoſt as much fatigued as before, and faint for want of nouriſhment, having taken none for thirty-ſix hours before: So having looked upon his clothes, which he perceived were not quite dry, he turned the other ſide to the ſun and laid himſelf down to ſleep again; but ſtill nothing but horror entered his mind: His ſoul was continually harraſſed with the diſmal apprehenſions the effects of the late ſtorm had impreſſed upon him. He dreamt he was in a terrible tempeſt, and the ſhip he was in daſhed backwards and forwards through the waves with prodigious violence, the clouds pouring down vaſt ſtreams of liquid fire, and the raging ocean all in flames. In this diſmal condition he knew not what to do; but ſpying ſome land, as he thought, at a little diſtance from the ſhip, he was endeavouring to get thither; but not daring to truſt the ſea, which he imagined was like a caldron of oil in a blaze, reſolved to try whether he could not jump aſhore: But juſt as he was going to leap, he ſaw a horrid frightful monſter, with glaring eyes, and open mouth, ruſh from the boiling flames, and make at him to devour him; which ſcared him out of his ſleep.

When he awoke, he was very much terrified with his dream, and ſtared about him in a frighted man-

ner,

ner, expecting every minute ſome creature to devour him: But, taking a little courage, put on his clothes, which by this time were quite dry. He then looks about him; but alas! could ſee nothing but the dreadful effects of the late tempeſt, dead corpſes, broken planks, and battered cheſts floating, and ſuch aſpects which at once filled him with terror and grief.

Turning from thoſe ſhocking objects, which preſented to his eyes the dreadful death he ſo lately had eſcaped, he ſees at the other ſide the proſpect of one more terrible, hunger and thirſt, attended with all the miſeries that can make life burdenſome. Being ſeiz. ed with the terror of the threatning evil, he turns again towards the ſea, and looking on the dead corpſes, which the ſea now-and-then drove to the rock, and back again, Oh! that I was like one of you, ſaid he, paſt all dangers! I have ſhared with you in the terrors of death: Why did not I alſo partake with you in its relief? But why ſhould I complain? and have ſo much reaſon to be thankful! Had I been cut off, when the cares of ſaving this worthleſs carcaſe intercepted me from ſeeking the ſalvation of my ſoul, I ſhould not have had the preſent opportunity of taking care of it. So, having returned thanks for his late deliverance, he reſigns himſelf to Providence, on whom he fully relies; climbs up the rock, and being come to the top, ſees land at the inſide, bearing both trees and graſs: Heaven be praiſed! ſaid he: I ſhall not periſh upon theſe barren rocks: So made a ſhift to go down to it, the weather then being calm.

THE ENGLISH HERMIT.

BOOK III.

An ACCOUNT *of* QUARLL's *wonderful ſhifts, and ſurprizing manner of living; of the miraculous acts of Providence, and of the ſtrange events which happened in the iſland ſince his being there.*

BEING come to the other ſide of the rock, he finds at the bottom of it a narrow lake, which ſeparated it from the land: Therefore pulling off his clothes, the water being but ſhallow, he wades over with them in his arms; and dreſſing himſelf, walks up a conſiderable way in the iſland, without ſeeing any human creature, or perceiving any ſign of its being inhabited, which ſtruck a great damp to his ſpirits. He walks it over and over, croſs-ways and long ways; yet could ſee nothing but monkeys, ſtrange beaſts, birds, and fowls, ſuch as he had never ſeen before.

Having ranged himſelf weary he ſat down under a cluſter of trees, that made an agreeable arbour: The place being pleaſant and cool, made, as it were, for repoſe,

repoſe, and he being ſtill very much fatigued, prompted him to lie down and ſleep; during which, his mind is continually alarmed with the frightful aſpect of grim death: Sometimes he fancies himſelf ſtriving with the rolling waves, ſtretching out his arms to catch hold of a plank toſſing by; which, juſt come at, is beaten back by the roaring billows, whoſe terrible noiſe pronounces his death; at other times, he thinks himſelf aſtride upon a piece of maſt, labouring to keep himſelf on, and of a ſudden waſhed away, and ſunk down by a bulky wave; on every ſide of him men calling for help; others ſpent and paſt ſpeaking; here ſome floating that are already periſhed, and there others expiring; thus in every object ſeeing his approaching fate.

Being awaked out of that irkſome and uneaſy ſleep, he falls into as anxious and melancholy thoughts. I have, ſaid he, eſcaped being drowned, but how ſhall I avoid ſtarving? Here's no food for man. But why ſhould I deſpair? Did not Nebuchadnezzar live upon graſs for ſeveral years, till reſtored to his nation? Cannot I do the ſame for a few days? by which time, Providence, who has hitherto protected me, may raiſe me ſome means to get from hence. So, being intirely reſigned, he walks about to ſee the iſland, which he found ſurrounded with rocks, at the bottom of which there was a ſmall lake, which was fordable in moſt places, ſo that he could with eaſe wade over to the rock; which he did at every ſide of the iſland, to ſee if he could perceive any ſhip, whereby he might get away: But, ſeeing none, and it drawing towards night, he returns, and employs the remainder of the day in looking for the moſt convenient place for him to paſs away the approaching night; and, having fixed upon one of the higheſt trees, he gets up as far as he well

well could, fearing ſome wild beaſt might devour him if he ſlept below; where having returned thanks to heaven for his late great deliverance, he commits himſelf to its care; then ſettles, and falls to ſleep, and ſlept till hunger waked him in the morning, having dreamt over night of abundance of victuals, which he would fain have come at, but was kept off by a croſs cook, who bid him go and fiſh for ſome: To which he anſwered, that he was ſhipwrecked; and had nothing to fiſh withal. Well then, ſaid the cook to him again, go where thou waſt like to loſe thy life, and there thou ſhalt find wherewithal to ſupport it.

Being awaked he makes reflections upon his dream, which though he imagined it might proceed from the emptineſs of his ſtomach, being cuſtomary for people to dream of victuals, when they go to bed hungry, yet at that time it may prove ominous: So driven by neceſſity, and led by curioſity, he went to the ſame ſide of the rock he had been caſt upon; where having ſtood ſeveral hours without ſeeing ſhipping, or aught that might anſwer his dream; the air coming from the ſea being pretty ſharp, and he faint, having taken no manner of food for near three days, he gave over all hopes of relief. Thus ſubmitting himſelf to the will of heaven, which he ſuppoſed decreed a lingering death to puniſh him for his paſt ſins, he reſolves to return where he lay the night before, and there wait for his doom; but being ſtopped by a ſudden noiſe which iſſued from a creek in the rock, not far from where he ſtood, he had the curioſity to go and ſee what occaſioned it.

Being come to the place he heard the noiſe proceed from, he ſees a fine large cod fiſh near ſix feet long, dabling in a hole in the rock, where the late ſtorm had caſt it.

One

One under condemnation of death, and juſt arrived at the place of excution could not be more rejoiced at the coming of a reprieve, than he was at the ſight of this fiſh, having felt ſeveral ſick qualms, forerunners of the death he thought he was doomed to. Heaven be praiſed! ſaid he; here's my dream right: Where Providence reſcued my life from the grim jaws of death, there it has provided me wherewithal to ſupport it.

So having taken off both his garters, he gets into the hole where the fiſh lay; and having run them through its gills, he hales it out, and drags it after him, being heavy, and he very weak. Going along, he finds ſeveral oyſters, muſſels, and cockles, in his way, which the ſea had caſt up and down the rock; and having a knife about him, he ſat down and eat a few; ſo refreſhed himſelf, his ſpirits being exhauſted for want of food. This ſmall nutriment very much recruited his decayed ſtrength; and the thoughts of his ſupply of proviſion having diſperſed the dull ideas his late want had bred in his mind, he chearfully takes his fiſh, which he drags with much more vigour than before; and filling his pockets with ſalt that was congealed by the ſun, which he found in the concavities of the rock, away he goes to the place, where he lay the night before, in order to dreſs ſome of the cod-fiſh; where being come, he picks up a parcel of dry leaves, and with his knife, and a flint, ſtruck fire and kindled them: Then getting together a few ſticks, made a fire preſently, and broiled a ſlice of his fiſh; of which he eat ſo heartily, that it overcame his ſtomach, being grown weak with faſting: Thus ſick, and out of order, he applies to the helpleſs recourſe, which was lying down; and having much fatigued and harraſſed himſelf with haling the heavy fiſh up and down the rock,

rock, he fell aſleep 'till the next morning; during which time his reſt was very much diſturbed with the frightful dream of being attacked by a terrible monſter, ſuch as never was heard of, either for bigneſs or grimneſs; which purſued him, till having run himſelf out of breath, he was forced to lie expoſed to his fury; but was prevented being devoured by a grave old gentlewoman of a moſt graceful and majeſtic countenance, at whoſe ſudden appearance the monſter fled. Having recovered breath, and ſtrength to ſpeak, he returns the old lady thanks for his deliverance, and begs leave to wait on her home, that he might know whither to come and pay his conſtant duty to her for this her late great kindneſs: To which ſhe anſwered, that ſhe was fixed in no particular habitation, but dwelt at every poor man's houſe; her occupation being to aſſiſt the helpeſs, but not the ſlothful and negligent: That he ſhould ſee her again before it was long. Mean time, ſhe bid him not go on in evil ways, but whenever overtaken, not to deſpair; for ſhe was always at hand: Nevertheleſs, ſhe would not have him too depending. And ſo went away, leaving him very eaſy and pleaſed in his mind, that he had eſcaped ſuch vaſt Danger.

Having ſlept quietly the remainder of the night, he awoke in the morning pretty freſh and hearty, but very much diſturbed at his late dream, which he feared preſaged and prognoſticated ſome approaching evil; but as he could make no comparative alluſion of the old lady, who reſcued him from the monſter, he concludes it muſt be an inſpiration of Providence (whom the grave old lady did perſonate in the dream) who lately had preſerved him from a death by all appearance unavoidable, to keep him from deſpair in this his great extremity, promiſing to be at hand upon occaſion;

occaſion; yet would not have him neglect means to get away from a place where want threatens him. For tho' he might for a while ſubſiſt upon fiſh, wherewith he may be ſupplied, being ſurrounded by the ſea; yet he could not imagine which way he could be furniſhed with clothes and bed againſt the winter; for want of which he muſt miſerably periſh with cold, unleſs ſupplied by ſome ſuch diſmal accident as expoſed him to the want thereof, which he heartily wiſhes and prays may never happen.

Having made theſe conſiderations, he, on his knees, returns kind Providence his hearty thanks for all his mercies that had been extended to him; begging the continuance of its aſſiſtance. Then, as he took directions from his dream, watching the opportunity of getting away from that melancholy place, he goes to the other ſide of the rock, to try if he could perceive any ſhipping in ſight.

The wind being pretty high, fed his hopes, that each ſucceeding hour would gratify his wiſhing look, with that object the preceding could not bring forth; but was diſappointed. The night approaching, kept back all probability for that time; however, depending on better ſucceſs the next day, he returns whence he came, and being hungry, makes a fire, and broils another ſlice of the fiſh, then lays the reſt upon broad green leaves, and ſtrews ſalt thereon to keep it from ſpoiling, then goes to reſt; and as he lay undiſturbed the night before under the trees, and much more eaſy then a-top, he ventured again, committing himſelf to the care of Providence.

But his thoughts, which all day had been diſturbed with the dread of thoſe hardſhips he muſt probably undergo, if obliged to continue there all winter, ſo ran in his mind, that they occaſioned ideas ſuitable to

thoſe

thoſe he had formed the day before; and cold being the greateſt of his fears, it, is alſo the principal ſubject of his dream; which preſented to his imagination, that he was in a ſpacious place, paved with hail-ſtones of a prodigious bigneſs, and ſurrounded with high mountains of ice, which echoed with ſhivers: At the father end thereof he ſaw an old man reſembling time, as he is commonly painted, with heaps of ſnow and hail about him, and himſelf very buſy with making more: At his ſide ſtood a very beautiful woman, whoſe ſhape and make was uncommon, and her features and complexion extraordinary; but what ſurprized him moſt, was her having three pair of breaſts, wonderfully handſome, and curiouſly placed, which ſeemed to adorn her boſom far more than the richeſt ſtomacher made of diamonds or pearls could do; ſo that what in other women would look monſtrous, was in her an addition to her matchleſs beauty.

The ſight of that moſt perfect and complete woman warmed his blood, which the coldneſs of the place had chilled, and tempted him to come nearer the charmer. As he advanced, every ſtep he made, ſeemed to add ſtrength to his limbs, and vigour to his life; which made him deſirous to come nearer to the perſon from whom he received ſuch beneficial effluvia; but was ſuddenly ſtoped by the old man's turning towards him with a grim and ſurly countenance, which threatned his nearer approach with evil.

Not daring to come nearer, he ſtands ſtill, wondering what buſineſs that moſt charming creature could have with that ſurly moroſe old fellow; when liſtening a while, he perceived ſhe was aſking boons of him in the behalf of a vaſt number of all ſorts of creatures that attended her at ſome diſtance behind, which he refuſed in a moſt churliſh manner; and as ſhe ſtill

perſiſted

perſiſted in her ſuit, following him up and down, the ill-natured old man ſlily ſteps to the froſty mountain, and pulls down a large clod of ice, which ſtop'd a gap therein, from whence came out a creature, made and featured like a man, but of a monſtrous ſize, and frightful aſpect; his exceſſive broad cheeks hanging down on each ſide of his long piked chin, like two empty bladders; and his prepoſterous belly hung down looking juſt like a ſail without wind. That monſter was no ſooner out, but he had orders from the ſpiteful old man to drive away the woman, and all her attendants; which word of command was no ſooner given, but it was put in execution. Having filled his ſhrivelled jaws with wind, which then ſtood out like ſo many kettle-drums, he falls a blowing upon one of the hills of ſnow, and turns it into a thick ſhower, which he drove with violence againſt that angel-like creature, and her clients, who immediately fled for ſhelter.

This barbarous treatment to the moſt deſerving of creatures put him in amaze; to whom the angry old man (ſeeing he did not go with the reſt) came in a fury, ſaying, doſt thou put me to defiance? I'll bury thee in that which I only ſtrewed over them, and went to lay hold of him; which cauſed him to awake in a wonderful fright.

Being riſen, he made reflections upon the late dreams: All my dreams, ſaid he, have ever proved ominous; and, if I miſtake not, this muſt have ſome ſignification; certainly this old man is time, laying up a ſtore of froſt and ſnow againſt next winter; and that goodly woman is nature, who being tender over all her creatures, interceded for moderation: And his ſurly refuſal, and rough uſage, prognoſticate a forward

and

and hard winter, to whoſe ſeverity I muſt lie expoſed, being altogether unprovided.

Theſe reflections bred various melancholy thoughts, which almoſt led him to deſpair. Oh! ſaid he, that I was but a mouſe, bat, or a yet meaner creature! Then ſhould I be below the cruel perſecutions of fate. But man, who was created in the nobleſt form, endued with reaſon and underſtanding, animated with an immortal ſoul, muſt be aimed at as the only mark worthy its malignant darts! But why do I thus rave at thoſe evils we are the authors of? Had man continued in his original ſtate of innocence, the very name of fate or fortune would not have been known. Well, ſince this is the product of ſin, I accept this black lot as juſtly coming to my ſhare; and humbly ſubmitting to heaven's decree, I thankfully take this dream as a timely warning; and, in imitation of thoſe creatures repreſented in it, I'll provide what ſhelter I can againſt bad weather comes.

Accordingly, firſt he begins to think of making himſelf an houſe to preſerve him from the injuries of the weather; but having nothing to make it of, nor any inſtrument but a knife, which could be of little ſervice to him, he reſolves to go to that part of the rocks where he was ſhipwrecked, to ſee if he could diſcover any thing among the wreck that might be ſerviceable to him; and therefore takes a branch of a tree along with him, and, coming to the place, he ſtrips himſelf, and goes into the water (the water being low, diſcovering the tops of ſeveral ſharp pointed rocks) and gropes along with his ſtaff for ſure footing, wading as high as his chin, diving to the bottom frequently, and feeling about with his hands. This he continued doing for almoſt two hours, but to no purpoſe, not daring to go out of his depth; for he well knew,

knew, that he could do little good there, becauſe he could diſcover no part of the ſhip, not ſo much as the maſt or any of the rigging, but fancied ſhe lay in ſome deep hole, where it was impoſſible to get at her.

Thus deſpairing, and fretting and teizing himſelf, he calls to mind, that he had a hatchet in his hand when he was caſt away, and thought probably it might lie in that cliſt of the rock, into which he was thrown; thither he went, and, looking about, perceived ſomething like the handle of a hatchet juſt above the ſurface of the water at the bottom of the rock; and, going down to it, took it up; which, to his great joy, proved to be the very thing he wanted.

Having got his tool, he dreſſes himſelf, and goes on to the iſland again, intending to cut down ſome trees to make himſelf a hut: Looking about, therefore, for the propereſt plants, and taking notice of a ſort of trees, whoſe branches, bending to the ground, took root, and became a plant, he thought they might be the fitteſt for this purpoſe, and cut a ſufficient parcel of them to make his barrack; which was full buſineſs for him that day.

The next morning, having paid his uſual devotion, he walks out again to look for a pleaſant and convenient place to make his hut or barrack upon: He walked ſeveral hours, and could find none more ſheltered from the cold winds, than that where he already lay, being in the middle of the iſland, well fenced on the north and eaſt ſides with trees, which ſtood very thick: The place being fixed upon, he hews down ſome trees that grew in his way, and clears a ſpot of ground about twelve feet ſquare, leaving one tree ſtanding at each corner; and, with the young plants he provided the day before, filled the diſtance between

quite

quite round, ſetting them about ſix inches aſunder, leaving a larger vacancy for the door: His incloſure being made, he bends the branches a-top from both ſides, and weaves them croſs one another, making a cover to it; which being ſomething too thin, he laid other branches over, till they were grown thicker: Having finiſhed the top, he goes about cloſing the ſides; for which purpoſe, taking large branches, he ſtrips off their ſmall twigs, and weaves them between the plants as they do for ſheep-pens; then made a door after the ſame manner.

His barrack being finiſhed, which took him up fifteen days hard work; now, ſaid he, here's a houſe, but where's the furniture? This, indeed, may keep the weather from me, but not the cold. The ground on which I do and muſt lie, is hard, and doubtleſs, in the winter, will grow damp; which, with want of covering, may occaſion agues and fevers, the cholick and rheumatiſm, and twenty racking diſtempers, which may cauſe me to repent my having eſcaped a milder death.

In this great conſternation and perplexity, he goes to ſee if he could ſpy any ſhipping riding within ſight of the iſland: As he was walking along, full of heavy and dull thoughts, which weighed his looks to the ground, he happened to find a ſort of high graſs that grows but here-and-there, round ſome particular ſort of trees, of which he never took notice before. Heaven be praiſed! ſaid he, I have found wherewithal to keep my poor body from the ground, whilſt I am, by Providence, doomed to remain here: So paſſes on, intending at his return, to cut down a ſufficient quantity of it to make mats that might ſerve him inſtead of bed and bed-clothes.

Having looked himſelf almoſt blind, without ſeeing the

the leaſt proſpect of what he deſired, he concludes upon going to cut the graſs which he ſtood in ſuch want of, and ſpread it to dry, whilſt the weather was yet warm: That piece of work kept him employed the remainder of the day, and beſt part of the ſucceeding, having nothing but a pocket knife to cut withal. That work being done, wanting a tool to ſpread and turn his graſs, he takes a branch off the next tree, which having ſtript of all the ſmall ones about it, all but part of that at the top, being forky made a tolerable fork: Thus being equipped for hay-making, he went on with his work; and as he was at it, he ſaw, at ſome diſtance, ſeveral monkeys as buſy as himſelf, ſcratching ſomething out of the ground, which they did eat upon the ſpot, and carried the reſt to their home.

His hopes that thoſe roots might be for his uſe, thoſe creatures being naturally dainty, eating nothing but what men may, made him haſten to the place he ſaw them ſcratching at, that by the herb they bear (which they tore off) he might find out the root.

Having by the leaves which he picked off the ground, found ſome of the ſame, he digs them up, and carried them to his barrack, where he broiled a ſlice of his fiſh, and in the aſhes roaſted them, which eat ſomething like cheſnuts done in the ſame manner.

This new-found-out eatable much rejoicing him, he returned his hearty thanks to kind Providence, that he had put him in a way to provide himſelf with bread, and that of a moſt delicious kind. As ſoon therefore as he had dined, he went out on purpoſe to dig up a good quantity; but, as he was going to the place where he had taken notice they grew pretty thick, he ſees a tortoiſe

tortoiſe, of about a foot over, crawling before him: Heaven be praiſed! ſaid he, here's what will ſupply me both with victuals, and utenſils to dreſs it in: He ran therefore, and turned it on its back, to keep it from getting away, whilſt he went for his hatchet, that he might cut the bottom ſhell from the top, in order to make a kettle of the deepeſt, and a diſh of the flat part.

Being tired of cod fiſh, he dreſſes the tortoiſe, an animal ſeldom eaten but upon extremity, the fleſh thereof often giving the the flux: Nevertheleſs he ventured upon it, and liked it extremely, ſome part of it eating very much like veal; which at that time was a very great novelty to him having eaten no freſh meat for a long time before.

Happening to eat of that part of the tortoiſe which is the moſt feeding and leſs hurtful, he was in no-wiſe diſcompoſed; but having boiled it all, he laid by the remainder to eat now-and-then between his fiſh.

Being provided with a boiling utenſil, he often had change, by means of thoſe admirable roots ſo luckily diſcovered; ſome of which he roaſted for bread, others he boiled with ſalt-cod: This in a great meaſure mitigated his misfortune, and ſoftened the hardſhip he lay under; ſo that ſeeing but little proſpect of changing his preſent condition, by getting away from thence yet-a-while, he thinks on means to make it as eaſy as poſſible whilſt he remained in it; for having projected a bed, and taken the graſs, which by that time was dry, he falls to work; and a mat being the thing concluded upon, he twiſts his hay into ropes, the bigneſs of his leg; then he cuts a pretty number of ſticks, about two feet long, which he drives in the ground, ten in a row, and near four inches aſunder, and oppoſite to them ſuch another row at ſix or ſeven feet diſtance

tance from the firſt, which made the length of his mat; then having faſtened one end of his rope to one of the corner ſticks, he brings it round the other corner ſtick, and ſo to the next at the other end, till he has laid his frame: Then he weaves acroſs ſhorter ropes of the ſame, in the manner they make pallions on board with old cable ends. When he had finiſhed his mat, he beat it with a long ſtick, which made it ſwell up; and the graſs being of a ſoft cottony nature, he had a warm and eaſy bed to lie on.

The comfort and pleaſure he found on his ſoft mat (being grown ſore with lying on the ground for the ſpace of a month and more) ſo liberally gratified him for the time and labour he had beſtowed in making it, that it gave him encouragement to go about another; a covering being the next neceſſary wanted; for though the winter was, as yet, pretty warm, and he, in a great meaſure, ſeaſoned by the hardſhip he had gone through; yet the winter approaching, and the preſent ſeaſon ſtill favourable for him to make proviſion againſt it, he goes and cuts more graſs; which being made ready for uſe, he lengthens his loom, to allow for rolling up at one end, inſtead of a bolſter, and makes it thicker than the firſt; which he intends, in cold weather, ſhall lie upon him inſtead of blankets.

Being provided with the moſt neceſſary furniture he wanted, he thinks on more conveniencies, reſoling to make a table to eat his victuals upon, and a chair to ſit on: Thus, having cut ſeveral ſticks about four feet long, he drives them in a row a little way in the ground; then takes ſmaller, which he interweaves between: Having made the top, he ſets it upon four other ſticks, forky at the upper end, which he ſtuck in the ground at one ſide of his barrack, to the height

of a table; this being done, he cuts four more branches, ſuch as he judged would do beſt for the ſeat and back of a chair, which he alſo drove in the ground near his table; and having twiſted the branches, which grew to them, with each other, from back to front, and acroſs again, he weaves ſmaller between, bottoming his ſeat; which completes the furniture of his habitation.

That care being over, another ſucceeds, of a far greater moment: Here's a dwelling, ſaid he, to ſhelter me from the weather, and a bed to reſt this poor body of mine; but where is food to ſupport it? here have I ſubſiſted near one month upon a fiſh, which the ſame dreadful ſtorm, that took away forty lives, ſent me to maintain my own. Well, ſince kind Providence has been pleaſed to preſerve my life preferable to ſo many, who fatally periſhed in that diſmal accident, I am bound, in gratitude, to hold it precious; and ſince my fiſh is almoſt gone, and I am not certain of more, I muſt by degrees bring myſelf to live upon roots, which I hope will never be wanting, being the natural product of this iſland: So I muſt eat of the ſmall remnant of my fiſh, but now-and-then, to make it hold out longer. Dainties or plenty were not allotted for him that was doomed to ſlavery, but labour, and hard living; and, if I meet here the latter, heaven be praiſed, I have eſcaped the worſe; I can take my reſt, and ſtand in no dread of any ſevere inſpector and taſk-maſter.

Now being entirely reconciled to the ſtate of life Providence, on whom he fully depended, had been pleaſed to call him to, he reſolves to make proviſion of thoſe excellent roots; and with his hatchet he cuts a piece of a tree, wherewith he makes a ſhovel, in order to dig them up with more eaſe: With this inſtrument

ment he went to the place where he had obſerved they grew thickeſt, which being near the monkeys quarters, they came down from off their trees in great numbers, grinning as if they would have flown at him; which made him ſtop a while: He might indeed, with the inſtrument in his hand, have killed ſeveral, and perhaps diſperſed the reſt; but would not: Why, ſaid he, ſhould I add barbarity to injuſtice? It is but natural and reaſonable for every creature to guard and defend their own: This was given them by nature for food, which I come to rob them of; and ſince I am obliged to get them for my ſubſiſtence, if I am decreed to be here another ſeaſon, I will ſet ſome in a place diſtant from theirs for my own uſe.

Having ſtood ſtill a conſiderable time, thoſe animals, ſeeing he did not go forwards, each went and ſcratched up for itſelf, afterwards retiring; giving him the opportunity to dig up a few for himſelf: And as he was not come to the place where they grew thick, he laid them in ſmall heaps as he dug them up; while thoſe ſly creatures would, whilſt he was digging up more, come down from the trees, where they ſtood hid among the leaves, and ſteal them away: Which obliged him to be contented for that time with as many as his pockets would hold, reſolving to bring ſomething next time which would contain a larger quantity; and fearing thoſe animals, which are naturally very cunning, ſhould dig them up, and hide them, he comes early the morning following to make his proviſion: And for want of a ſack to put them in, he takes his jacket, which he buttons up, and ties at the ſleeves; and as he had obſerved, that every root had abundance of little off-ſets hanging at it by ſmall fibres, he pulled off his ſhirt alſo, of which he makes another ſack to put them in.

Being naked, all but his breeches, and the day being pretty hot, he thought he had as good pull them of too, and fill them, his jacket being but ſhort, and therefore holding but few: Taking, therefore, his bundle in one arm, and having the ſhovel in the other hand, he goes to the place he intended to do the day before; and expecting to find the ſame oppoſition as he did then, he brought with him ſome of the roots he had dug up the preceding day, in order to throw them amongſt thoſe animals, and ſo quiet them: But to his great wonder, and as great ſatisfaction, thoſe creatures which the time before oppoſed him with noiſe, and offenſive motions, let him now paſs by quietly, without offering to meddle with any when dug up, though he had laid them up by heaps in their way, and ſtood at a conſiderable diſtance from them.

This ſurprizing reverence from thoſe creatures, ſet him upon deep reflections on what could be the cauſe thereof; whether it might not proceed from the proximity of their ſhape and his: But then, ſaid he, my ſtature and colour of ſkin is ſo different from theirs, that they cannot but diſtinguiſh I am not of their kind: No, it muſt be a remnant of that awe, entailed by nature upon all animals, to that moſt noble and complete maſter-piece of the creation, called Man, which, now appearing in the ſtate he was firſt created in, and undiſguiſed by clothes, renew an image of that reſpect he has forfeited by his fatal tranſgreſſion, which ever ſince obliged him to hide the beauty of his fabric under a gaudy diſguiſe, which often renders him ridiculous to the reſt of mankind, and generally obnoxious to all other creatures; making a pride of what he ought to be aſhamed of: Well, adds he, ſince my clothes bred the antipathy, I will remove that cauſe, which will both ſuit the nature of thoſe

animals,

animals, and my own circumſtances. From that time he reſolves to go naked, till the hardneſs of the weather obliged him to put ſomething on.

Having picked up a ſufficient quantity of off-ſets to ſtock about two acres of land, he returns home, leaving behind him a conſiderable number of roots dug up for thoſe poor animals, which attended him all the time he was at work, without offering to touch one till he was gone.

Being come home, he fixes upon a ſpot of ground near his habitation, and digs it up as well as he could with his wooden inſtrument, in order to ſow his ſeed: Which having compaſſed in about twenty days, he implores a bleſſing upon his labour, and leaves it to time to bring it forth. Thus having finiſhed the moſt neceſſary work about his barrack, he reſolves to take a more particular view of the iſland, which till then he had not time to do; and taking a long ſtaff in his hand, he walks to the lake, which parts the land from the rock, and goes along the ſide of it quite round the iſland, finding all the way new ſubjects of admiration: On the left hand ſtood a rampart made of one ſolid ſtone, adorned by nature with various forms and ſhapes, beyond the power of art to imitate; ſome parts challenging a likeneſs to a city and cluſters of houſes, with here and there a ſteeple ſtanding above the other buildings; another place claiming a near reſemblance to a diſtant ſquadron of men of war in a line of battle: Further, it bears compariſon with the dull remains of ſome ſumptuous edifice, ruined by the often-repeated ſhocks of time, inciting, the beholders to condolence for the loſs of its former beauty. At ſome diſtance from thence the proſpect of a demoliſhed city is preſented to the ſight; in another place large ſtones like ſmall mountains, laid, as it were a-

top of one another, impreſs the mind with an idea of the tower of Babel; and on the right-hand a moſt pleaſant land covered with beautiful green graſs, like chamomile, and here-and-there a cluſter of trees, compoſing moſt agreeable groves, among a vaſt number of fine lofty trees of divers heights and ſhapes, which ſtood more diſtant, whoſe irregularity added much to the delightfulneſs of the place.

As he was walking on, admiring all theſe wonderful works of nature, having caught cold (not being uſed to go naked) he happened to ſneeze oppoſite to a place in the rock, which hollowed-in after the manner of the inſide of ſome cathedral, and was anſwered by a multitude of different voices iſſuing from that place: The agreeableneſs of the ſurprize induced him to rouſe thoſe echoes a ſecond time, by giving a loud hem; which was, like his ſneezing, repeated in different tones, but all very harmonious: Again he hemmed, and was ſo delighted with the repetition, that he could have ſpent hours in the hearing of it: But why ſhould I, ſaid he, waſte thoſe melodious ſounds, ſo fit to relate the Almighty's wonderful works, and ſet forth his praiſe? Immediately he ſung ſeveral pſalms and hymns, with as much emulation and devotion, as if he had been in company with numbers of ſkilful and celebrated choriſters.

Having ſpent a conſiderable time there with much pleaſure, he proceeds in his walk, being reſolved to make that his place of worſhip for the future, and attend it twice a day conſtantly.

About three or four hundred paces farther, having turned on the other ſide of a jetting-out part of the rock, he was ſtopt a ſecond time by another ſurprizing product of nature; a large ſtone, growing out of the

the rock, advancing quite over the lake at the bottom of it, repreſenting ſomething of a human ſhape, out of the breaſt whereof iſſued a fountain of exceeding clear water, as ſweet as milk; and, when looked at fronting, was like an antique piece of architecture, which in old times they built over particular ſprings; and on the other ſide appeared as if ſpringing from the noſtrils of a ſea-horſe: Theſe three ſo very different, and yet rightly compared likeneſſes, being offered by one and the ſame unaltered object, made him curious to examine what parts of every reſemblance helped to make out the others: And having ſpent a conſiderable time in the examination, he found every thing, which the front had likeneſs of, was employed in making the ſide-repreſentation, by being in ſome places ſhortened, and in others lengthened; according to the point of ſight.

Being ſatisfied about that ſubject, he enters upon another as puzzling: The baſon, in which the fountain ran, which was about five yards diſtant from whence the water did ſpring, being about nine feet over every way, without any viſible place to evacuate its over-complement, and yet keeping the ſame height, without daſhing or running over, although the ſtream that fell into it ran as big as his wriſt. Having a long time ſearched into the cauſe, without any ſatisfaction, he conjectures it muſt make its way out ſomewhere under-ground; ſo went on, till he came to the place he had begun his march at, which ended that day's work.

Having been round the iſland, which to the beſt of his judgment, was about ten or eleven miles in circumference, of an oblong form, going in and out in ſeveral places, extending from north to ſouth, the ſouth end near twice as broad as the oppoſite; he re-

ſolves to employ the next day in viewing the inſide. Then recommending himſelf to Providence, as he never failed to do, both morning and evening, he goes to bed; but not being ſleepy, the over-active faculty in man roves from one ſubject to another: His mind runs from his preſent ſtation to his former, re-aſſuming his paſt pleaſures, which he never muſt hope to meet with again, and calls in all the evils his preſent condition of life lays him expoſed to. Theſe dull thoughts quite diſlodge his late born hopes of heaven's aſſiſtance, and ſhake his future dependence on Providence: He ſnarls and quarrels with his fate, and repines at his condition; which not being in his power to mend, he wiſhes for eternal ſleep, to free his mind of tumults and cares, which croud upon him.

Sleep was granted him, but not reſt: His repining is chaſtiſed with terrifying dreams of the puniſhment he had been condemned to; all his paſt troubles come upon him in the moſt grievous and ſhocking manner they could appear: his raging wives at once fall upon him, exerting their utmoſt malice and revenge, which he cannot avoid, but by embracing either an ignominious death, or a ſevere and vile bondage. Theſe terrible aſpects put him in the ſame pains and agony, as if already feeling the aſſigned torment.

Having in his dream, with hard ſtrugglings, eſcaped death, he finds himſelf in an exceeding hot country, his half naked body continually bending to the hard and dry ground, grabbling round a nauſeous weed for fulſome worms; every now-and-then laſhed by a croſs and ſevere taſk maſter, who hurries him to work: In this great perplexity he cries out, Oh, that I had ended my woful days at the ſhameful gibbit!

Sure

Sure it would have been a milder fate! At which he awakened in ſuch a conſternation, that it was ſeveral minutes before he could be thorougly ſatisfied it was but a dream. Having recalled his diſperſed ſenſes, he made this reflection; that it really was the penalty he had been ſentenced to, and by Providence preſerved from. Setting then his preſent condition in oppoſition to that, he acknowledges his ingratitude, for which he ſecretely repents, and on his knees, with weeeping eyes, aſks pardon, imploring the continuation of Providence's protection; reſolving for the future, never to think or wiſh to change that ſtate of life it had pleaſed heaven to place him in; wholly dedicating the remains of his days to God's worſhip: Holding henceforth, as ineſtimable, the happineſs of being freed from thoſe cares, which daily flew on them who are concerned with the world, which might cool or ſlaken his duty to ſo great a benefactor.

Having entirely reſigned himſelf to the will of God, he caſts off all cares, and baniſhes from his mind all that could create any; reſolving to employ thoſe hours that ran between the intervals of time he had dedicated to divine worſhip, in the contemplation of the many wonderful works of nature, manifeſted in ſuch various manners all over the iſland.

So he walks along the land, which he found very level, covered with a delightful green graſs, and adorned with trees of divers ſorts, ſhapes, and height, inhabited with ſeveral ſorts of curious ſinging birds, of various colours and notes, which entertained him with their melodious harmony: In ſome places ſtood a cluſter of trees, compoſing agreeable and delightful groves, proceeding from only one main body, whoſe lower branches, being come to a certain length,

applied to the earth for immediate nouriſhment, as it were, to eaſe the old ſtem that produced them; and ſo became a plant and did the ſame.

Having for ſome time admired the agreeableneſs and curioſity of the plant, by which nature ſeemed to give human kind inſtructions; and looking about, if perchance he could find any thing in his way for his own proper uſe; he took along with him a ſample of every different herb he thought might be eatable. Croſſing the iſland in ſeveral places, he comes at a moſt delightful pond, about two hundred yards in length, and one hundred and fifty wide, with fine trees ſpreading their branchy limbs over its brink, which was ſurrounded with a beautiful bank, covered with divers kinds of flowers and herbs, ſo naturally intermixed, which compleated it in ornament and conveniency, as tho' intended by nature for more than mortal's uſe.

Having walked ſeveral times around it, with much pleaſure, he ſat down a while upon its bank, to admire the clearneſs of the water, through which, to his great comfort he ſaw many different ſorts of fiſh, of various bigneſſes, ſhapes and colours. Heaven be praiſed! ſaid he, here is a ſtock of freſh water fiſh to ſupply me with food, if the ſea ſhould fail me.

Being ſufficiently diverted with their chaſing one another, which were of many beautiful and different colours, and made a moſt delightful ſcene, he proceeds in his walk, and goes to the ſouth of the iſland, where he finds another ſubject of admiration; a noble and ſpacious wood, whoſe ſhades ſeemed to be made for the abode of peace and pleaſure: He walked round it with much delight, which made the time ſeem ſhort;

yet

yet he could gueſs it to be no leſs than two miles about.

Having viewed the outſide, whoſe extraordinary agreeableneſs incited in him an unſurmountable deſire to get into it, but where he was afraid to venture, leſt there might be deſtructive creatures; yet having recommended himſelf to the care of Providence, he ventured into it, finding ſeveral pleaſant walks, ſome ſtrait, edged with lofty trees, as tho' planted for pleaſure; others crooked and winding, bordered with a thick hedge of pimentoes, which caſt a moſt fragrant ſmell: Here-and-there a large cluſter of buſhes and dwarff trees, wherein ſheltered ſeveral different kinds of wild beaſts and fowls. Sure, ſaid he, this iſland never was intended by nature to lie waſte, but rather reſerved to be the happy abode of ſome, for whom heaven had a particular bleſſing in ſtore: Here is every thing ſufficient, not only for the ſupport, but alſo for the pleaſure of life; Heaven make me thankful, that I am the happy inhabitant of ſo bleſſed a land!

Being hungry and tired with walking, he goes home, in order to get ſome victuals, and, having made a fire, he boils a ſlice of his ſalt fiſh with ſome roots, and then the herbs he brought with him, which proved of divers taſtes and all excellent; ſome eating like artichoaks, others like aſparagus and ſpinach. Now, ſaid he, what can I wiſh for more! Here I poſſeſs a plentiful land, which produces both fowls, fleſh, and fiſh; bears excellent greens and roots, and affords the beſt of water, which by nature was ordained for man's drink. Pomp and greatneſs are but pageantry, which oftentimes prove more prejudicial to the actor, than diverting to the beholder: Eaſe and indulgence are apt to breed the gout, and various diſtempers, which make the rich more wretched than the poor; now theſe

evils, thanks to my Maker, I ſtand in no danger of, having but what is ſufficient, which never can do any harm.

Thus thoroughly eaſy in his mind, he propoſes to ſpend the afternoon at the outſide of the rock, in viewing the ſea, and looking for oyſters; ſo takes in his hand his long ſtaff to grabble in holes; and his breeches which he ties at the knees, to bring them in. Being come to a place of the rock he never had been at before, he ſees at a diſtance, ſomething like linen hanging upon it; which, when come at, he found to be the main-ſail of a ſhip, with a piece of the yard faſtened to it: Alas! ſaid he, a diſmal token of infatiable ambition! which makes men often loſe their lives in ſeeking what they ſeldom find; and, if they ever do, 'tis commonly attended with a world of care. Happy is he who limits his deſires to his ability; aſpiring not above his reach, and is contented with what nature requires. Then he falls a ripping the ſheet from the yard, which he finds in one place tyed with one of his garters, (having himſelf made uſe of it for want of another ſtring) heaven be praiſed, ſaid he, this is no effect of another ſhipwreck, but a fragment of the unfortunate ſhip, whoſe loſs was my redemption; which reflection made him ſhed tears.

Having ripped the ſail in pieces, he rolls them up in ſuch bundles as he could conveniently carry, and lays them down till he had got a few oyſters, proceeding to grope in holes with his ſtick as he went on.

About forty paces farther, he finds a cheſt in a cliſt of the rock, which had been waſhed up there by the violence of the late ſtorm: Heaven! ſaid he, more fatal effects of fate's cruelty, and man's temerity! Was the ſea made for men to travel on? Is there not land

enough

enough for his rambling mind to rove! Muſt he hunt after dangers, and put death to defiance? What is the owner of this the better for it now! Or who can be the better in a place ſo remote, and the acceſs to it ſo difficult? being not to be approached but on the wings of Providence, and over the back of death. Now, was this full of maſſy gold, or yet richer things, I thank my God, I am above the uſe of it; yet I'll take it home: It was ſent hither by Providence, perhaps for the relief of ſome, neceſſitated and deſtitute. Then going to liſt it, he could not; therefore was obliged to fetch his hatchet to beat it open, that he might take away what was in it by degrees. Having taken as much of the ſail-cloth as he could conveniently carry, with the few oyſters he had got, he went home, and fetched the tool, wherewith he wrenched the cheſt open, from which he took a ſuit of clothes, and ſome wearing linen: Theſe ſaid he, neither the owner, nor I, want; ſo laid them down: The next thing he took out, was a roll of ſeveral ſheets of parchment, being blank indentures and leaſes; theſe, ſaid he, are inſtruments of the law, and often applied to injuſtice; but I'll alter their miſchievous properties, and make them records of heaven's mercies, and Providence's wonderful liberality to me, ſo, inſtead of being the ruin of ſome, they may chance to be the reclaiming of others. At the bottom of the cheſt lay a rundlet of brandy, and a Cheſhire cheeſe, a leather bottle full of ink, with a parcel of pens, and a penknife: As for theſe, ſaid he, they are of uſe; the pens, ink, and parchment have equipped me to keep a journal, which will divert and paſs away a few anxious hours: As for the cheeſe and brandy, they will but cauſe me new cares: Before I had them, I wanted them not: now, the benefit and comfort I ſhall find

find in them, when gone, will make me hanker after them moſt; I wiſh I had ſtill been without them; but now they are here, it would be a ſin to let them be loſt. I'll take them home, and only uſe them at my need; which will make them both hold out the longer, and me grow leſs fond of them.

So, by degrees, he takes home the cheſt, and what was in it; and now having materials to begin his journal, he immediately fell to work, that for want of other books, he might, at his leiſure, peruſe his paſt tranſactions, and the many mercies he had received from heaven; and that after his deceaſe, whoever is directed thither by Providence, upon reading his wonderful eſcapes in the greateſt of dangers: his miraculous living, when remote from human aſſiſtance; in the like extremity, might not deſpair. Thus he begins from his being eight years old (as well as he can remember, he heard an old aunt of his ſay) to the day of his being caſt away, which happened on the 10th of July, '675, being then twenty-eight years of age, reſolving to continue it to his death.

Thus having written the preceding account of the ſhipwreck, and what had befallen him ſince, to the finding of the cheſt, which was on the 15th of September 1675, he proceeds: But calling to mind his laſt dream but one, which did warn him to make proviſion againſt winter, and the ſeaſon being pretty far advanced, he gathers a good ſtore of fuel and roots: begins to line the outſide of his barrack with a wall of turf, and lays the ſame a-top to keep out the wet; And as he now-and-then found ſmall ſhell-fiſh and oyſters upon the rock, he makes a bridge over the lake which in warm weather he uſed to wade, that in winter he might go over dry; So, having compleated his bridge, which was made of two ſtrong poles, which reached

reached from the land to the rock, and ſeveral leſſer branches laid acroſs pretty cloſe, he retires home, the day being far ſpent: The following night, being the 18th of September, there aroſe a violent ſtorm, attended with dreadful claps of thunder, which the many echoes from the rock, rendered more terrible; and lightnings flaſhing in a moſt frightful manner, ſucceeding each other, before the preceding was wellout of the ſky, which put poor Ioanſome Quarll in ſuch a conſternation, that (notwithſtanding his reliance on heaven's protection) he would have given the world (had it been in his poſſeſſion) to have been within the reach of human aſſiſtance; or at leaſt, to have ſome company; ſolitude adding much to his terror and affliction.

The glorious riſing of the next morning's ſun having laid the mortifying rage of the bluſtring winds, Quarll, whoſe late alarm was hardly quelled, ſtill ſuſpecting its moſt reviving rays to be terrifying glances, and flaſhes of lightning: but having lain a while, and hearing no noiſe, but that which ſtill raged in his mind, was at laſt convinced the ſtorm was over; and ſo gets up with a reſolution to go and ſee if he could diſcern any effect of the late tempeſt.

Being come at the other ſide of the rock, he ſaw indeed, ſurpriſing objects, but not afflicting; the miſchief, that was done, being to the inhabitants of the ſea only, a vaſt number of which had, by the wind, been diſ-elemented; a quantity of ſtately whitings, fine mackerels, large herrings, divers ſizes of codlings, and ſeveral other ſorts of fiſh, with a great number of ſhells, of different ſhapes and bigneſſes, lying up and down upon the rock. Heaven be praiſed! ſaid he, inſtead of damage to bewail, what thanks have I now to return for this mighty benefit! Here the powerful agent of miſchief is, by kind Providence, made a miniſter

niſter of good to me: Make me thankful! I am now provided for all the next winter; and yet longer; by which time I am certain to have a freſh ſupply.

* *He who, when in diſtreſs,*
To GOD makes his addreſs,
And his bounties implore;
Is ſure, and may depend,
That relief he will ſend,
And at need help the poor.

Thus having taken up as many fiſh as he could hold in his arms, he carries them home, and brings his ſhirt, which he uſed inſtead of a ſack: So, at ſeveral times, he brought away all the fiſh and as many of the ſhells as he had occaſion for; of ſome of which he made boilers and ſtew-pans, of others diſhes and plates: Some he kept water in, and others fiſh in pickle; ſo that he was ſtocked with neceſſary veſſels as well as proviſion.

Being very weary with often going backwards and forwards with his fiſh, which took up all that day to bring them home, he ſits down to reſt himſelf; and the rundlet of brandy lying by, he was tempted to take a ſup, which was at that time very much wanted, his ſpirit being very low; but was loth to taſte it, leſt he ſhould grow fond of the liquor, and grieve after it when gone: Some moments were ſpent before he could come to a reſolution: At laſt having conſidered the uſe of it, which ſuited the preſent occaſion, he concludes to take a dram, and to uſe it like a cordial, as it was firſt intended for; but the veſſel, out of which he drank, being at

* Leſt the reader ſhould think, theſe and the following verſes to be the effect of my own brain, I ſolemnly proteſt, they are what I found in his memoirs, written with his own hand.

at his mouth, the cordial turns to a nectar, one gulp decoys another down; ſo the intended dram becomes a hearty draught. The pleaſantneſs of the liquor made him forget its nature; ſo that poor Quarll, who had, for the ſpace of near three months before, drank nothing but water, was preſently overcome with the ſtrength of the brandy, and fell aſleep in his chair, with the rundlet on his bare lap, from whence it ſoon fell to the ground, and being unſtopt, ran all out.

Being awaked with hunger, having ſlept from evening till almoſt noon of another day, which he knew not whether the ſucceeding or the next to it; ſeeing what had happened, he was ſorely vexed, and could have wept at the accident; but, conſidering the liquor which occaſioned it, might perhaps, in time, have cauſed greater miſchief, he ſoon was reconciled with the loſs, but could not with that of the right order of the days, which having intirely forgot, hindered the going on of his journal; ſo was obliged to make only a memorial. That damage being repaired, another appears of a far greater conſequence; the Sunday is loſt, which he had ſo carefully obſered to that time: How can that be made up? Now, ſaid he, ſhall I daily be in danger of breaking the ſabbath, knowing not the day. Oh fatal liquor! that ever thou wert invented to cauſe ſo much miſchief! murder, adulteries, and blaſphemies, are daily, by thy moſt pernicious uſe, occaſioned. But why ſhould I lay the blame upon the uſe, when it is the abuſe that does the hurt? and exclaim againſt a thing, which being taken in moderation, is of ſo great a benefit reviving a fainting heart, raiſing ſinking ſpirits, warming cold and decayed nature, and aſſwaging ſeveral pains: So blames himſelf highly for gratifying his appetite with that wherewith he only ought to have refreſhed

refreſhed nature; and ſince that often miſguided faculty had prompted him to commit the fault, he dedicated that day, in which he became ſenſible of it, to prayers and faſting; and every ſeventh, from that he ſets apart for divine worſhip only, which he hoped would keep him from breaking the commandments for keeping holy the ſabbath day; it being not certain, that the day appointed by the church for that purpoſe was the very day God had ſanctified for reſt: So went to the place where the echoes, in many different and melodious ſounds repeated his thankſgiving to the Almighty, which he had fixed upon to pay his devotion, and there ſpent the reſt of the day in prayers, and and ſinging of pſalms.

The next morning, having breakfaſted with ſome of his uſual bread, and a ſlice of the cheeſe he found in the cheſt, he goes about curing his fiſh, in order to ſalt them: Having laid by as many, for the preſent uſe, as he thought he could eat whilſt freſh, he improves the fair weather to dry one part of the remainder, and keeps the reſt in pickle.

The winter being near at hand, and the weather growing damp and cold, hinders him from his walks; ſo being confined within doors, he employs his idle hours in beautifying his utenſils, which were not to be uſed on the fire; and beſtowed ſome pains in ſcraping and poliſhing the reſt of his ſhells, ſome as fine as tho' they had been nakers of pearl; which made them not only more fit for their intended uſes, but alſo a great ornament to his barrack, which he ſhelved round with plaited twigs after the manner of his table, and ſo ſet them upon it.

Thus he ſpent the beſt part of the winter, making no farther remarks, but that it was very ſharp attended with high winds, abundance of hail and ſnow, which

which obliged him to make a broom to ſweep it away from about his hut, which otherwiſe would have been damaged by it.

But ſhivering winter, having exhauſted his froſty ſtores, and weary with vexing nature, retired; Boreas alſo, grown faint with hard blowing, is forced to retreat into his cave; gentle Zyphyrus (who till then kept up in his temperate cell) now comes forth to uſher in the blooming ſpring; ſo mildly ſlips on to inform nature of her favourites approach, who at the joyful news put on her gay enamelled garb, and out of her rich wardrobe ſupplies all vegetables with new veſture, to welcome the moſt lovely gueſt. The feathered choriſters alſo receive new ſtrength; their tender lungs are repaired from the injures the foggy and miſty air did occaſion; and, thus revived, are placed on every budding-tree, to grace his entrance with their harmonious notes.

Quarll alſo, whom bad weather had confined within-doors a conſiderable time, which had in a great meaſure numbed his limbs, and dulled his ſenſes, now finds himſelf quite revived: He no longer can keep within; the fair weather invites him out; the ſinging birds on every ſide call to him; Nature itſelf fetches him out to behold the treaſures.

Having with unſpeakable pleaſure walked ſome time, diverted with the ſweet meldoy of various kinds of ſinging birds, and the ſight of abundance of different ſorts of bloſſomed trees, and blooming flowers; all things within the iſland inſpiring joy; he had the curioſity to go and view the ſea: So goes over his brige; and then, at the other ſide of the rock, where he finds more objects, requiring as much admiration, but affording a great deal leſs pleaſure; vaſt mountains of

ice

of ice, floating up and down threatning all that came in their way.

Theſe terrible effects of the winter, which to that time he was a ſtranger to, occaſioned his making theſe reflections:

He, who on billows roves, riches or wealth to gain,
Is ever in danger, and labours oft in vain;
If fortune on him ſmiles, giving his toils ſucceſs,
Each day new cares ariſe, which mar his happineſs.
The only treaſure, then, worth laying up in ſtore,
Is a contented mind, which never leaves one poor:
He is not truly rich, who hankers after more.

So, having returned heaven thanks for his happy ſtate, he creeps to the north-eaſt ſide of the rock, at the foot of which lay an extraordinary large whale, which the late high wind had caſt there, and died for want of water. If this, ſaid he, is all the damage that has been done laſt winter, it may be borne; ſo went down, and meaſured the length of it, which was above thirty yards, and proportionable in bigneſs: There were ſhoals of ſmall fiſhes ſwimming about it in the ſhallow water wherein it lay, as rejoicing at its death: Thus, ſaid he, the oppreſſed rejoice at a tyrant's fall, What numbers of theſe have been deſtroyed to make this monſtrous bulk of fat! Well, happy are they, who, like me, are under heaven's government only. So with his knife, which he always carried in his pocket, cuts ſeveral ſlices of the whale, and throws them to the ſmall fiſhes, ſaying, 'tis but juſtly ye ſhould, at leaſt, feed on that which ſo long fed on you; and, as oil ran, in abundance, from the places he had cut the ſlices out of, it vexed him to ſee that waſted, which might turn to good money: But why,

ſaid

ſaid he, ſhould I be diſturbed at it? What uſe have I for any? Providence takes none it gives me all gratis. So goes on feeling for oyſters with his ſtaff which he always walked with.

Having at laſt found a hole, where by their rattling at the bottom with his ſtaff, he judged there might be a pretty many, he marks the place, and goes home to contrive ſome inſtrument to drag them up, being yet too cold for him to go into the water; and as he had no tool but his knife and hatchet, both improper to make a hole in a board, as requiſite to make a rake, which was wanting for that purpoſe; he beat out the end of his cheſt, in which there was a knot: So having driven it out, he faſtens the ſmall end of a pole to it. Thus equipped, he went and raked up oyſters, which added one diſh to his ordinary, and ſauce to others; yet at length his ſtomach growing qualmiſh with eating altogether fiſh, and drinking nothing but water withal, he wiſhes he could have a little fleſh, which he might eaſily, there being animals enough in the wood apparently fit for food; but then he muſt deprive them of their lives, barely to make his own more eaſy.

Thus he debates with himſelf for ſome time, whether or no it would not be injuſtice for him (who only by a providential accident was brought thither to ſave his life) now to deſtroy thoſe creatures, to whom nature has given a being, in a land out of man's reach to diſturb: Yet nature requires what ſeems to be againſt nature for me to grant: I am faint, and like to grow worſe, the longer I abſtain from fleſh.

Having pauſed a while; why, ſaid he, ſhould I be ſo ſcrupulous? Were not all things created for the uſe of man? Now, whether is it not worſe to let a man periſh, than to deſtroy any other creature for his relief?

relief? nature craves it, and providence gives it: now, not to uſe it in neceſſity, is undervaluing the giſt.

So, having concluded upon catching ſome of thoſe animals he had ſeen in the wood, he conſiders by what means, having no dogs to hunt, nor guns to ſhoot: Having pauſed awhile, he reſolves upon making gins, wherewith, he had ſeen hares catched in Europe: Thus, taking ſome of the cords which he found with the ſail at the outſide of the rock, he goes to work, and makes ſeveral, which he faſtens, at divers gaps in the thickſet, within the wood, through which he judged that ſort of beaſt, he had a mind for, went.

Impatient to know the ſucceſs of his ſnares, he gets up betimes the next morning, and goes to examine them; in one of which he found a certain anmal ſomething like a fawn, the colour of a deer, but feet and ears like a fox, and as big as a well-grown hare; He was much rejoiced at his game, whoſe mouth he immediately opened, to ſee if he could find out whether it fed upon graſs, or lived upon prey, the creature being caught by the neck, and ſtrangled with ſtruggling, before it died had brought up in its throat ſome of the greens it had been eating, which very much pleaſed him; accounting thoſe which lived upon fleſh as bad as carrion.

Having returned thanks for his good luck, he takes it home in order to dreſs part of it for his dinner; ſo caſes and guts it: But its proving to be a female. big with three young ones, grieved him to the heart, and made him repent making thoſe killing nooſes: What pity, ſaid he ſo many lives ſhould be loſt, and creatures waſted! One would have ſerved me four days; and here are four killed at once. Well, henceforth, to prevent the like evil, I'll take alive what I juſt want, and ſave all the females. So, having ſtuck

a

a long ſtick at both ends in the ground, making a half-circle, he hangs one quarter of the animal upon a ſtring before a good fire, and ſo roaſts it.

His dinner being ready, having ſaid grace, he ſet to eating with an uncommon appetite: and, whether it was the novelty of the diſh, or that the meat did really deſerve the praiſe; he really thought he never eat any thing of fleſh, till then, comparable to it, either for taſte or tenderneſs.

Having dined both plentifully and deliciouſly, he moſt zealouſly returns kind Providence thanks for the late, and all favours received; then, purſuant to his reſolution, he goes about making nets, in order to take his game alive for the future; and, as he had no ſmall twine to make it with, he was obliged to unravel ſome of the ſail which he luckily had by him; and with the thread, twiſt ſome of the bigneſs he judged proper for that uſe.

Having made a ſufficient quantity, he makes a couple of nets, about four feet ſquare, which he faſtens in the room of the killing ſnares; ſo retired, and reſolved to come and examine them every morning.

Several days paſſed without taking any thing, ſo that he wanted fleſh a whole week; which did begin to diſorder his ſtomach, but not his temper; being intirely reſigned to the will of Providence, and fully contented with what ever heaven was pleaſed to ſend.

One afternoon, which was not his cuſtomary time of day to examine his nets, being too viſible in the day time for game to run in; he happened to walk in the wood, to take full dimentions thereof ſo chanced to go by his nets; in one of which were taken two animals, as big as a kid ſix weeks old, of a bright dun, their horns upright and ſtrait, their ſhape like a ſtag, moſt curiouſly limbed, a ſmall tuft of hair on each

ſhoulder

ſhoulder and hip. By their horns, which were but ſhort, they appeared to be very young, which rejoiced him the more, being in hopes to tame thoſe which he did not want for preſent uſe; ſo carried them home, joyful of his game, depending upon a good dinner; but was ſadly diſappointed: The animals he found were antelopes (calling to mind he had ſeen them in his travels) which, proving both females, he had made a reſolution to preſerve. Tho' they were too young to be with kind, and he in great need of fleſh, ye the would not kill them; ſo with cords, faſtens them to the outſide of his lodge; and with conſtant feeding them in two months time made them ſo tame, that they followed him up and down; which added much to the pleaſure he already took in his habitation, which by that time was covered with green leaves, both top and ſides; the ſtakes it was made of having ſtruck root, and ſhot out young branches; whoſe ſtrength increaſing that ſummer, to fill up the vacancy between each plant, he pulled the turfs, wherewith he had covered the outſide and top of the hut between them, to keep the cold out in the winter.

His former hut, being now become a pleaſant arbour, gave him encouragement to beſtow ſome pains about it towards the embelliſhment of it, which ſeemed to depend on being well attended. He reſolved upon keeping it pruned and watered, the better to make it grow thick and faſt, which anſwered his intent; for, in three years time, the ſtems of every plant that compoſed the arbour, were grown quite cloſe, and made a ſolid wall of about ſix inches thick, covered with green leaves without, which lay moſt regular and even, and within had a moſt agreeable ſmooth bark, of a pleaſant olive-colour.

His

His late arbour being, by his care and time, and nature's aſſiſtance, become a matchleſs lodge, as intended by nature for ſomething more than human gueſts, he now conſults to make it as commodious as beautiful. Here is, ſaid he, a delightful dwelling, warm in the winter, and cool in the ſummer; delightful to the eye, and comfortable to the body; pity it ſhould be employed to any uſe, but repoſe and delight! So reſolved upon making a kitchen near it. Thus having fixed upon a place convenient at the ſide of his lodge, about ſix feet from it, twelve in length, and eight in breadth, which he incloſed with the turfs that covered the outſide of his arbour, before it was ſufficiently thick to keep out the cold; then, having laid ſticks acroſs the top of the walls, which were about eight feet high, he lays turf thereon, and ſo covers it, leaving an open place for the ſmoak to go out.

The outſide being done, he goes about inſide neceſſaries, as fire-places, to roaſt and boil at; thus cuts a hole in the ground, at a ſmall diſtance from the wall, after the manner of ſtew-ſtoves in noblemen's kitchens; then at another place, he ſets two flat ſtones, about eight or nine inches broad, and one foot long, edgeways, oppoſite to one another; near two feet aſunder; then puts a third in the ſame manner, at the end of the other two; ſo makes a fire-place fit to roaſt at: Then, for other conveniences, he weaves twigs about ſticks, ſtuck in the wall on one ſide of the kitchen, where he lays the ſhells fit for utenſils, which both adorned and furniſhed it.

Having completed that piece of work, he goes and viſits his plantations, which he finds in a thriving condition: the roots being, in ſix months time, grown from the bigneſs of a pea (as they were when firſt

ſet) to that of an egg: His antelopes, alſo, were come to their full growth, and complete beauty, which exceeded moſt four-footed beaſts; having a majeſtic preſence, body and limbs repreſenting a ſtag, and the noble march of a horſe: So every thing concurred to his happineſs. For which, having returned his moſt liberal benefactor his grateful acknowledgements, he thinks on means to prevent any obſtructions that may intercept the continuation thereof; and as the want of clothes was the only cauſe, he could think of, to make him uneaſy, having but the jacket and hoſe which were given him on board to ſave his own clothes, which, when worn out, he could not recruit; therefore to accuſtom himſelf to go without, he thins thoſe he had, ſo takes away the lining from the outſide of his cloathing, in order to wear the thickeſt in the coldeſt weather, and ſo thins his dreſs by degrees, till at laſt, he went quite naked.

Having thus concluded, as being the beſt ſhift neceſſity could raiſe him, he falls to ripping his jacket, in the lining whereof he finds ſeven peas, and three beans, which were got in at a hole in the corner of the pocket.

Thoſe few made him wiſh for more, which he had no room to hope for, they being raiſed by ſeed, which the iſland did not produce: Theſe few, ſaid he, which at preſent are hardly ſufficient to ſatisfy a woman's longing, may with time and induſtry, be improved to a quantity large enough to ſerve me for a meal; then lays them up againſt a proper time to ſet them: ſo ſpent the remainder of the ſummer in walking about the iſland, watering his lodge, weeding his root plantation, attending his nets, which now-and-then ſupplied him with an antelope or goat, to eat at intervals between fiſh he commonly found on the rock after high

high winds and ſtorms; never failing to viſit the ſea three or four times a week, according as the weather did prove; thus diverting many anxious hours with variety of objects that element affords. Sometimes he had the pleaſure of ſeeing great whales chaſing one another, ſpouting large ſtreams of water out of their gills and noſtrils; at other times, numbers of beautiful dolphins rolling amongſt the waves; now-and-then a quantity of ſtrange monſtrous fiſh playing on the ſurface of the ſea, ſome whereof had heads (not common to fiſhes) like thoſe of hogs; others not unlike thoſe of dogs, calves, horſes, lions, bulls, goats, and ſeveral other creatures: Some chaſing another ſort; which, to avoid being taken, would quit their element, and ſeek refuge in the air, and fly ſome yards above the water; till their fins, being dry, obliged them to plunge in again.

Theſe paſtimes being generally ſucceeded with bad weather, and dreadful ſtorms, checked the pleaſure they gave, with a dread of the evil that threatned to follow. Thus commiſerating the caſe of thoſe whoſe misfortune is to be expoſed to them; having ſpent ſome time in reflection, he goes to his uſual devotion; and calling to mind, that in all that time he never ſaw a young fiſh in it, he conjectured that ſomething might deſtroy the ſmall ones; and as he imagined ſo it proved: For, at his approach a large fowl flew out of the pond with a fiſh in its bill, being two large for it to ſwallow.

At that diſtance, the bird being alſo upon the wing, he could neither diſcern colour nor make; but he had the ſatisfaction of diſcovering the cauſe why the fiſhes did not increaſe, they being devoured when young by that creature; which to prevent for the future, he ſtudies means to kill the deſtroyer, nets not

being proper inſtruments; it being requiſite for that purpoſe, to have one all round, as alſo to cover the pond, which was impoſſible by reaſon of its largeneſs; and a leſs being of no uſe; the birds probably not coming to one certain place. He wiſhed for a gun, and ammunition fitting, as being the moſt probable things to ſucceed; but no ſuch inſtrument being within his reach, he ponders again; during which time a croſs-bow offers itſelf to his mind, but is as diſtant from his reach as the gun: 'Tis true, there was ſtuff enough in the iſland to make many, but no tools but a hatchet and a pocket knife; wherewith, if he made ſhift to cut and ſhape a bow, he could not make a latch and ſpring neceſſary to it; ſo he muſt not think on't: Yet, a bow being the only thing he could apply to, he goes about it forthwith. Thus having picked a branch of a tree, which had the reſemblance of a yew, and as tough, of which they are ſometimes made, he, with the tools he had, made ſhift to make one, of about ſix feet long, and arrows of the ſame, which he hardens and ſtraightens over the fire; then, having ſlit them at one end, about two or three inches, he ſlips in a bit of parchment, cut ſharp at one end, and about three inches at the other; then ties the end cloſe, to keep it in, which ſerved for feathers; and, with the ravelling of ſome of the ſail, he makes a ſtring to it.

Thus equipped for an archer, wanting nothing but ſkill, which is only to be gained by practice, he daily exerciſes the ſhooting at a mark for the ſpace of a fortnight; in which time he made ſuch an improvement, that in three ſhots he would hit a mark of about three inches ſquare, at near fifty paces diſtance.

Being ſufficiently ſkilled, he goes and lies in wait

for

for his deſired game; ſo places himſelf behind a tree, as near to the pond as he could, whither the bird came in a few hours after.

The creature being pitched upon the bank, never ſtood ſtill, but kept running round, watching for a ſizeable fiſh fit to ſwallow; ſo that he had no opportunity to ſhoot: 'Till having, at laſt, ſpyed out one, it launched itſelf into the pond, but raiſed more eaſily, which gave him time to take aim; nevertheleſs, he miſſed it, being in motion; but when come to the top, he ſtruck it thro' the body, as it opened its wings, and laid it flat on the other ſide of the pond. He took it up, wonderfully pleaſed at his good ſucceſs the firſt time of his practiſing his new-acquired art; yet, having taken notice of the bird's beauty, he had a regret for his death, tho' he might, in time, have rued its living; the ſtock of fiſh weekly decreaſing, by his own catching, one now-and-then with a ſmall net he made for that uſe, when ſhort of other proviſions; and their recruiting prevented by that bird's daily devouring their young.

The inexpreſſible beauty of the feathers, which were after the nature of a drake, every one diſtinguiſhed from another by a rim round the edge thereof, about the breadth of a large thread, and of a changeable colour, from red to aurora and green; the ribs of a delightful blue, and the feathers pearl-colour, ſpeckled with a bright yellow; the breaſt and belly (if it might be ſaid to be of any particular colour) was that of a dove's feathers, rimmed like the back, diverſly changing; the head, which was like that of a ſwan, for make, was purple alſo, changing as it moved; the bill like burniſhed gold; eyes like a ruby, with a rim of gold round it; the feet the ſame as the bill; the ſize of the bird was between a mid-

dling gooſe and a duck, and in ſhape reſembling a ſwan.

Having bemoaned the death of that delightful creature, he carefully takes out its fleſh, which, corrupting, would ſpoil the outſide; then fills the ſkin with ſweet herbs, which he dried for that uſe; and having ſewed up the place he had cut open, to take the fleſh out, he ſet it up in his lodge.

His good ſucceſs in archery, made him love the exerciſe; ſo that what odd hours he had in the day (beſide, thoſe he ſet apart for his divine worſhip, and thoſe neceſſary occupations about his lodge, plantations, and making remarks) he beſtowed in ſhooting at the mark; which in time made him ſo expert, that he hardly would miſs a ſtanding mark the bigneſs of a dove, at forty or fifty yards diſtance, once in ten times; and would ſhoot tolerably well flying; having once occaſion to try it upon a monſtrous eagle, which often flew rounding over the place where his antelopes and goats fed, near his lodge; which he ſhot at, fearing it would damage them, and killed with the ſecond arrow.

The ſummer being over, during which, having been much taken up about his habitation and plantations, he had neither time nor opportunity to make remarks, farther than that it was ſome days very ſhowery, and for the moſt part generally very hot; but now the weather being grown ſomewhat cold, and the wind pretty ſharp, he muſt be obliged to put on ſome clothes to keep it off; being as yet too tender to go any longer without; next to provide for his antelopes againſt the approaching winter; ſo makes a lodge for them, at the backſide of his kitchen, with ſticks, which he drove into the ground about two feet from the wall, and then bends them about three feet

from

from the ground, and ſticks them in the ſaid wall, and ſmaller branches he interwove between them: He ſhuts up the front, and covers the top, leaving both ends open for the antelopes to go in at; then lays graſs (which he dryed on purpoſe) in the ſaid lodge, for them to lie on. Thus, having dug up a conſiderable quantity of roots, and being already ſtocked with ſalt-fiſh, both dry and in pickle, he was pretty well provided, for his cattle and himſelf, againſt the enſuing winter, which proved much like the preceding one, only not ſo ſtormy.

The ſucceeding ſpring having awaked ſlumbering nature, and revived what the preceeding hard ſeaſon had cauſed to droop, every vegetable puts on new cloathing, and recovers their wonted beauty; each animal aſſumes freſh vigour; the beaſts in the wood leap and bound for joy, and each bird on the trees ſings for gladneſs. The whole creation is, as it were repaired, and every creature decked with new life: Love, by nature's direction, for the encreaſe of every kind, warms their harmleſs breaſts; each animal ſeeks a mate; our tame antelopes quit their abode, and range the woods for the relief ordained to quell their innocent paſſion; which being aſſuaged, they return home, pregnant with young, to their maſter's great ſatisfaction; who, having given them over, was doubly rejoiced to ſee them come again in an increaſing condition. Heaven be praiſed! ſaid he, I ſhall have a ſtock of my own; and will not fear wanting.

So, having made fitting preparations againſt their kidding, he goes and examines the improvement of his new plantation, where he found his roots grown full as large as any of thoſe that grew wild. Make me thankful! ſaid he; I am now provided with all ne-

ceſſary food: I ſhall no more need to rob thoſe poor creatures of that which nature had provided for their own proper uſe. Next he goes and views his ſmall ſtock of peas and beans, which he found in a very promiſing caſe: So, whilſt the weather was fair, he falls to clearing a ſpot of ground to ſet them in, as they increaſed.

Turning up the ground, he found ſeveral ſorts of roots that looked to be eatable, ſome whereof were as big as a large carrot, others leſs. He broke a bit of every one; ſome of which breaking ſhort, and not being ſtringy, he judged they might be eatable: Then he ſmells them; and finding the ſcent not diſagreeable, he taſtes them. Some were ſweetiſh, others ſharp and hot, like horſeradiſh; and thoſe he propoſes to uſe inſtead of ſpice. Sure, ſaid he, theſe, being of a pleaſant ſcent and ſavour, cannot be of an offenſive nature: So, having manured his ground, he takes a ſample of every root which he judged eatable, and boils them, as the ſureſt way to experience their goodneſs.

Moſt of them proved not only paſſable good, but extraordinary; ſome eating like parſnips, others almoſt like carrots, but rather more agreeable; ſome like beets and turnips; every one, in their ſeveral kinds, as good as ever he eat in England, but of different colours and make; ſome being bluiſh, others black; ſome red, and ſome yellow: Theſe, tho' not wanted, having ſufficient to gratify a nicer taſte than his, were nevertheleſs extremely welcome, being ſomewhat like his native country fare and product: So having returned thanks for this moſt agreeable addition to his ordinary, he ſets a mark to every herb which thoſe roots bore, in order to get ſome of the ſeed to ſow in a ground he would prepare: So, being

provided

provided with fleſh, fiſh, herbs, and ſeveral ſorts of roots, he goes and examines what improvement his peas and beans have made; which he found increaſed to admiration; the ſeven peas having produced one thouſand, and the three beans one hundred: Haing returned thanks for that vaſt increaſe, he lays them by, in order to ſet them at a proper ſeaſon, as he had done the year before.

By this time his antelopes had kidded, one of them having brought four young ones, and the ſecond three: This vaſt addition to his proviſions very much rejoiced him, being ſure now not to want fleſh at his need, which before he was in danger of; finding but ſeldom any thing in his net: So makes account to live upon two of the young bucks whilſt they laſted; killing one as ſoon as fit for meat, and ſo now-and-then another, ſaving only five to breed; one whereof ſhould be a mate to keep the females in rutting-time, from the wood; leſt, at one time or other, they ſhould ſtay away for good and all.

The old ones being well fed, as he always took care to do, providing for them ſtore of thoſe greens he knew they loved; as alſo boiled roots for them now-and-then, of which they are very fond; the young ones throve apace, and grew very fat; ſo that in three weeks time they were large, and fit to eat. He killed one; which being roaſted, proved to be more delicious than any houſe-lamb, ſucking-pig, young fawn, or any other ſuckling whatever.

Having lived upon that, with now-and-then a little fiſh, about one month, which was as long as he could keep it eatable, having dreſſed it at two different times, five days interval; eating the cold remains in ſeveral manners; reſerving one of the other two

males for a time he ſhould be ſcanted, and in want of fleſh; but was unluckily diſappointed by a parcel of large eagles, which flying one morning over the place where the young antelopes were playing, being of a gay, as well as active diſpoſition, who launched themſelves with precipitation upon the male he reſerved for time of need, and one of the females which he kept for breed, ſeeing his beloved diverters carrying away by thoſe birds of prey, he runs in for his bow, but came too late with it, the eagles being gone.

Having loſt his two dear antelopes, eſpecially the female, having doomed the male for his own eating, he hardly could forbear weeping, to think of their being cruelly torn to pieces by thoſe ravenous creatures: Thus having for ſome time lamented his loſs, and bewailed their hard fate, he thinks on means to prevent the like evil for the time to come; and as his bow was not always at hand, he reſolves upon making a net, and faſtens it between the trees he ſaw them come in at.

The ſucceeding winter proving very wet and windy, gave him but little invitation to take his uſual walks; ſo having every thing he had occaſion for at hand, he kept cloſe to his net-making; for which having twine to twiſt, and thread to ravel out, to make the ſaid twine, kept him employed till the following ſpring, which came on apace.

Having finiſhed his net, and every thing which belonged to it, he goes and faſtens it to the trees, as he had propoſed; then takes a walk to his new plantations, which he found in a thriving condition; for which, and other benefits already received, he reſolves, as in duty bound, to attend at this uſual place of worſhip, and ſing thankſgiving pſalms, which the hardneſs

of

of the weather had kept him from all the late winter: but it coming into his mind, that whilſt he was at his devotion, returning thanks for the fair proſpect of a plentiful crop, his antelopes would break into the cloſe, the hedge being as yet but thin, and devour the promiſing buds, which are the principal occaſion of his devotion; this not altogether improper conſideration puts a ſad check to his religious intention: And though there was a vaſt obligation to prompt him to the performance of that part of his duty, yet he could not with wiſdom run the hazard, out of mere devotion to loſe ſo promiſing a crop, which he ſhould never be able to retrieve; all his ſtock of ſeed being then in graſs.

As he was debating in his mind between religion and reaſon, whether the latter ought not to be a director to the former, he perceived his antelopes making towards the peas, whither they, doubtleſs, would have got in, had he not returned, and driven them another way: Which accident convinced him he might find a more proper time to go about his devotion; no man being required to worſhip to his prejudice: So, having put off his religious duty till he had better ſecured his peas and beans, he cuts a parcel of branches, wherewith he ſtops thoſe gaps to prevent the creatures going in; and having completed his work, he goes to his devotion, adding to his uſual thankſgiving, a particular collect for his luckily being in the way to prevent his being fruſtrated of the bleſſing heaven ſo fairly promiſed to beſtow on his labours.

Having paid his devotion, he walks about the iſland, being all the way delighted with the birds celebrating their Maker's praiſe, in their different harmonious notes! Every thing in nature, ſaid he, anſwers the end of its creation, but ungrateful man! who,

ambitious to be wiſe, as his creator, only learns to make himſelf wretched. Thus he walks till the evening making ſeveral reflections on the different conditions of men, preferring his preſent ſtate to that of Adam before his fall, who could not be ſenſible of happineſs, having never known a reverſe; which, otherwiſe he would have been more careful to prevent. Being come home and near bed-time, he firſt eats his ſupper; and then, having performed his cuſtomary religious ſervice, he goes to bed: The next morning, after paying his uſual devotion, he takes a walk to his plantations, on which he implores a continuation of the proſperous condition they appear to be in; next, he goes to examine his nets, in which he finds a brace of fowls like ducks, but twice as large, and exceeding beautiful: The drake (which he knew by a coloured feather on his rump) was of a fine cinnamon colour upon his back, his breaſt of a mazarine blue, the belly of a deep orange, his neck green, head purple, his eyes, bill, and feet, red; every colour changing moſt agreeably as they moved. The duck was alſo very beautiful, but of quite different colours, and much paler than the drake's.

The diſappointment in catching thoſe delightful fowls, inſtead of ravenous eagles, as he had purpoſed, no-ways diſpleaſed him, but he rather was rejoiced to have ſuch beautiful fowls to look at; yet it went much againſt his mind to deprive thoſe creatures of their liberty (the greateſt comfort in life) which nature took ſuch pains to adorn: But, ſaid he, they were created for the uſe man: So, in keeping them for my pleaſure, they will but anſwer the end of their creation. Their confinement ſhall be no ſtricter than my own; they ſhall have the whole iſland to range in. He then pinions them, puts them in the pond, and makes

baſkets

baſkets for them to ſhelter in, which he places in the branches of thoſe trees that hung cloſeſt to the water, taking particular care to feed them daily with roots roaſted and boiled; and the guts of the fiſh, and other creatures, he uſed for his own eating; which made them thrive mainly, and take to the place; ſo that they bred in their ſeaſon.

The five antelopes had by this time kidded, and brought ſixteen young ones: His peas and beans alſo were wonderfully improved, having that ſeaſon enough to ſtock the ground the year following. Thus he returned kind Providence thanks for the vaſt increaſe, and concludes to live upon the young antelopes as long as they laſted, reſerving only one for ſuck of the old ones, to keep them in milk, of which he had taken notice they had plenty, deſigning to draw it daily for his own uſe; ſo that in a little time he had enough to ſkim for cream, which he uſed for ſauce inſtead of butter, and made ſmall cheeſes of the reſt: Now having a pretty ſtore of dairy-ware, he reſolves to make a place to keep it in; the kitchen wherein he was obliged to lay his ſalt-fiſh (which commonly ſmells ſtrong) not being a proper place for cream and milk: For which end he makes a dairy-houſe at the other ſide of his dwelling, with branches of trees, after the manner of a cloſe arbour, and thatches it over with graſs; which anſwering the kitchen in form and ſituation, made uniform wings, that added as much to the beauty as conveniency of the habitation.

Having completed his dairy, he proceeds in his reſolution of making cheeſe, having learned the way in Holland; and for want of runnet to turn his milk, he takes ſome of the horſeradiſh ſeed, which, being of a hot nature, had the ſame effect: Having curd to his mind, he ſeaſons it to his palate; then with his hatchet,

hatchet, he cuts a notch round in the bark of a tree, about eighteen inches in circumference; and a ſecond in the ſame manner, ſix inches below that: Then ſlits the circle, and with his knife gently opens it, parting it from the tree: Thus he makes as many hoops as he judged would contain his paſte, which, being girded round with cords to keep them from opening, he fills with the ſaid paſte, and lays them by, till fit to eat.

This being done, which completed his proviſions, he returns thanks for thoſe bleſſings which had been ſo liberally beſtowed on him: Now, ſaid he, heaven be praiſed! I exceed a prince in happineſs: I have a habitation ſtrong and laſting, beautiful and convenient, freehold, a ſtore of comforts, with all neceſſaries of of life free coſt, which I enjoy with peace and pleaſure uncontrouled: Yet I think there is ſtill ſomething wanting to complete my happineſs: If a partner in grief leſſens ſorrow, certainly it muſt in delight, augment pleaſure. What objects of admiration are here concealed, and, like a miſer's treaſure, hid from the world! If man, who was created for bliſs, could have been completely happy alone, he would not have had a companion given him: Thus he walks about thoughtful, till bed-time.

In that diſpoſition he goes to bed, and ſoon fell aſleep: The night alſo, being windy, added to his heavy diſpoſition: But his mind finds no repoſe: It ſtill runs on upon the ſubject, that took up the day before, and forms ideas ſuitable to his inclination: And as ſolitude was the motive of its being diſturbed, he indulges it with the thoughts of company, dreaming that the fame of his ſtation, and happy ſtate of life, was ſpread about the world; that it prompted a vaſt number of people, from all parts, to come to it, which at laſt induced ſeveral princes to claim a right

to

to it; which being decided by a bloody war, a governor was ſent, who laid taxes, demanded duties, raiſed rents, and warns him to be gone, having fixed upon his habitation for himſelf to dwell in. Being ſadly diſturbed, he cries out in his ſleep, this is a great puniſhment for my uneaſineſs: Could I not be contented with being lord of this iſland, without provoking heaven to bring me under the power of extorting governors.

There happening a great noiſe, he ſtarts out of his ſleep, with the thought of hearing a proclamation; and cried out, alas! 'tis too late to proclaim an evil which is already come: But, being thoroughly awake, and the noiſe ſtill continuing, he found he had been dreaming, which very much rejoiced him: He therefore put on his clothes, and haſtens to the place he heard the noiſe come from.

Being within forty or fifty yards thereof, he ſaw a number of monkeys of two different kinds; one ſort ſqueaking and fighting againſt the other, without intermixing, but ſtill rallying, as they ſcattered in the cuffle. He ſtood ſome time admiring the order they kept in; and the battle ſtill continuing as fierce as at firſt, he advanced to ſee what they fought about; for he took notice, they very much ſtrove to keep their ground.

At his approach the battle ceaſed; and the combatants, retiring at ſome diſtance, left the ſpot of ground, on which they fought, clear; whereon lay a conſiderable quantity of wild pomgranates which the wind had ſhook off the trees the night before, and which were the occaſion of their ſtrife.

His coming having cauſed, a truce, every one of thoſe creatures keeping ſtill and quiet during his ſtay, he reſolves to uſe his endeavour to make a ſolid peace; and as that difference had ariſen from the fruit there preſent, to which he could ſee no reaſon but that each

kind

kind had an equal right; he divides it into two equal parcels, which he lays oppoſite to each other towards both the parties, retiring a little way to ſee whether this expedient would decide the quarrel: Which anſwered his intent; thoſe animals quietly coming to that ſhare next to them, and peaceably carrying it away each to their quarters. This occaſioned ſeveral reflections on the frivolous, and often unjuſt quarrels that ariſe among princes, which create ſuch bloody wars, as prove the deſtruction of vaſt numbers of their ſubjects. If monarchs, ſaid he, always acted with as much reaſon as theſe creatures, how much blood and money would they ſave! Thus goes on to his uſual place of worſhip, in order to return thanks, that he was free of that evil, the dream whereof had ſo tortured his mind; tho' he confeſſed he juſtly deſerved the reality; for his uneaſineſs in the happieſt of circumſtances.

Having paid his devotion, he takes a walk to ſee how his peas and beans came on, which he found in a very improving diſpoſition, each ſtem bearing a vaſt number of well fill'd pods. Heaven be praiſed, ſaid he; I ſhall eat of this year's crop, and have ſufficient to ſtock my ground the enſuing one.

Thus being plentifully ſupplied with neceſſaries, and in a pleaſant iſland, every thing about him being come to perfection; his dwelling, which ſeems intended by nature for ſome immortal gueſt, being, by time, yearly repaired and improved, leaving no room for care; yet the unwiſe man, as if an enemy to his own eaſe, cannot be contented with the enjoyment of more than he could reaſonably crave, but muſt diſturb his mind with what concerns him not: What pity, ſaid he, ſo delightful a habitation, attended with ſuch conveniencies, and ſituated in ſo wholeſome an air,

air, and fruitful a land, ſhould at my death, loſe all thoſe wonderful properties, being become uſeleſs for want of ſomebody to enjoy them! What admiration will here be loſt for want of beholders! But what kind of man could I ſettle it upon, worthy of ſo fine an inheritance? Were it at my pleaſure to chuſe myſelf an heir, ſuch only appear virtuous, whoſe weak nature confides to chaſtity: Every conſtitution cannot bear exceſs: Want of courage occaſions mildneſs, and lack of ſtrength good temper: Thus virtue is made a cloak to infirmity: But why do I thus willingly hamper myſelf with thoſe cares Providence has been pleaſed to free me of?

Leave the miſer the knowing care,
Who'll ſucceed him or be his heir;
That racks his ſoul with diſcontent,
Leſt what he rak'd for ſhould be ſpent.
His gold to him is far more dear,
Than all his friends or kindred near.

Thus he holds the iſland from Providence: freely he bequeaths it to whom Providence ſhall think fit to beſtow it upon: And, that his heir may the better know the worth of the gift, he draws a map of the whole eſtate; and made an inventory of every individual tenement, appurtenances, meſſuages, goods and chattels, and alſo a draught of the terms and conditions he is to hold the here mentioned poſſeſſions upon; viz.

Imprimis, A fair and moſt pleaſant iſland, richly ſtocked with fine trees, and adorned with ſeveral delightful groves, planted and improved by nature, ſtored with choice and delicious roots and plants for food, bearing

bearing peas and beans; likewiſe a noble fiſh-pond, well ſtocked with divers ſorts of curious fiſh; and a ſpacious wood, harbouring ſeveral ſorts of wild-fowl, and beaſts, fit for a king's table.

Item, A dwelling commenced by art, improved by nature, and completed by time, which yearly keeps it in repair, as alſo its furniture.

Item, The offices and appurtenances thereof, with the utenſils thereunto belonging; which ſaid iſland, dwelling, &c. are freehold, and clear from taxes; in no temporal dominion, therefore ſcreened from any impoſitions, duties, and exactions; defended by nature from invaſions or aſſualts; guarded and ſupported by Providence: All which incomparable poſſeſſions are to be held upon the following terms, viz.

That whoſoever ſhall be by Providence ſettled in this bleſſed abode, ſhall, morning and evening, conſtantly (unleſs prevented by ill weather or accident) attend at the eaſt ſide of this iſland and within the alcove nature prepared for the lodgment of ſeveral harmonious echoes, and there pay his devotion; ſinging thankſgiving pſalms to the great origin and director of all things, whoſe praiſes he will have the comfort to hear repeated by melodious voices.

Next, he ſhall religiouſly obſerve and keep a ſeventh day for worſhip only, from the riſing of the ſun until the going down thereof: Therefore he ſhall, the day before, make all neceſſary proviſion for that day.

That he ſhall, after any tempeſtuous wind or ſtorm, viſit

viſit the ſea at the outſide of the rock, at the eaſt, ſouth, weſt, and north ends, in order to aſſiſt any one in diſtreſs.

He ſhall not be waſteful of any thing whatſoever, eſpecially of any creatures life; killing no more than what is neceſſary for his health: But ſhall every day examine his nets, ſetting at liberty the overplus of his neceſſity, leſt they ſhould periſh in their confinement.

He muſt alſo keep every thing in the ſame order and cleanneſs he ſhall find them in; till and manure the ground yearly; ſet and ſow plants and ſeeds, fit for food in their proper ſeaſons.

Having written this at the bottom of the map he had drawn, being ſupper time, he takes his meal; then goes to his uſual evening devotion; and, after an hour's walk, to his bed, ſleeping quietly all night, as being eaſy in his mind.

The next morning he takes his uſual walks, and viſits his nets: In that he had ſet for eagles, he found a fowl as big as a turkey, but the colour of a pheaſant, only a tail like a partridge: This having no ſign of being a bird of prey, he was loth to kill it; but having had no freſh meat for above a week, he yields to his appetite, and dreſſes it, eating part thereof for his dinner: It was very fat and plump, and eat much like a pheaſant, but rather tenderer, and fuller of gravy.

Tho' he was very well pleaſed with the bird he had taken, yet he would rather it had been one of the eagles which kept his young antelopes in jeopardy: But as he could not deſtroy them with his net, which had hung

hung a conſiderable time without the intended ſucceſs, he projects the prevention of their increaſe, by deſtroying their eggs, leaving his nets wholly for the uſe they had been ſucceſsful in; and ſearches the cliſts of the rock next to the ſea, where thoſe birds commonly build; where having found ſeveral neſts, he takes away the eggs that were in them, being then their breeding time, and carries them home, in order to empty the ſhells, and hang them up-and-down in his habitation, among the green leaves which covered the cieling thereof; but having accidentaly broke one, and the yolk and white thereof, being like that of a turkey, he had the curioſity to boil one, and taſte it, which eat much after the manner of a ſwan's: The reſt he ſaved to eat now-and-then for a change, reaping a double advantage by robbing thoſe birds; leſſening thereby the damage they might do him in time, and adding a diſh to his preſent fare.

In this proſperous way he lived fifteen years, finding no alteration in the weather or ſeaſons, nor meeting in all the time, with any tranſactions worth of record: ſtill performing his uſual exerciſes, and taking his walks with all the content and ſatisfaction his happy condition could procure; intirely forſaking all thoughts and deſires of ever quitting the bleſſed ſtation he then had in his poſeſſion.

Thus having walked the iſland over and over (which tho' delightful, yet the frequent repetition of the wonders it produces, renders them, as it were, common, and leſs admirable) he proceeds to view the ſea, whoſe fluid element being ever in motion, daily affords new objects of admiration.

The day being very fair, and the weather as calm, he ſat down upon the rock, taking pleaſure in ſeeing the waves roll, and, as it were, chaſe one another; the

next

next purſuing the firſt, on which it rides, when come at; and being itſelf overtaken by a ſucceeding, is alſo mounted on thus, wave upon wave, till come to a bulky body, too heavy for the undermoſt to bear, ſunk all together: This, ſaid he, is a true emblem of ambition; men ſtriving to outdo one another, are often undone.

As he was making reflections on the emptineſs of vanity and pride, returning heaven thanks, that he was ſeperated from the world, which abounds in nothing elſe; a ſhip appears at a great diſtance, a ſight he had not ſeen ſince his ſhipwreck: unlucky invention! ſaid he, that thou ſhould'ſt ever come into men's thoughts! the Ark, which gave the firſt notion of a floating habitation, was ordered for the preſervation of man; but its fatal copies daily expoſe him to deſtruction. Having therefore returned heaven thanks for his being out of thoſe dangers, he makes a ſolemn vow, never to return into them again, tho' it were to gain the world; But his reſolution proved as brittle, as his nature was frail; the men on board had ſpyed him out with their perſpective-glaſſes: and ſuppoſing him to be ſhip-wrecked, and to want relief, ſent their long-boat with two men to fetch him away.

At their approach, his heart alters its motion; his blood ſtops from its common courſe; his ſinews are all ſtagnated; which intirely unframes his reaſon, and makes him a ſtranger to his own inclination; which ſtruggling with his wavering reſolution, occaſions a debate between hope and fear: But the boat, being come pretty nigh, gave hope the advantage, and his late reſolution yields to his revived inclination; which being now encouraged by a probable opportunity of being anſwered, ruſhes on to execution. He now, quitting all his former reliance on Providence, depends

pends altogether upon his getting away, bleſſing the lucky opportunity of ſeeing his bleſſed country again, for which pleaſure he freely quits and forſakes all the happineſs he enjoyed! gladly abandoning his delightful habitation, and plentiful iſland: He thinks no more of Providence; his mind is intirely taken up with his voyage: But diſappointment, which often attends the greateſt probabilities ſnatches ſucceſs out of his hand before he could graſp it, and intercepts his ſuppoſedly infallible retreat: The boat could not approach him, by reaſon of the rocks running a great way into the ſea under water; nor could he come at the boat for ſharp points, and deep holes, which made it unfordable, as well as unnavigable; ſo that after ſeveral hours ſtriving in vain on both ſides, to come at one another; the men after they had ſtrove all they could but to no purpoſe, ſaid ſomething to him in a rage, which he underſtood not, and went without him, more wretched now, than he was when he was firſt caſt away: His full dependance upon a retreat made him abandon all further reliance on Providence, whom then he could implore; but now, having ungratefully deſpiſed heaven's bounties, which had been ſo largely beſtowed on him, he has forfeited all hopes of aſſiſtance from thence, and expects none from the world: Thus deſtitute, and in the greateſt perplexity, he cries out; Whither ſhall I now fly for help? The world can give me none, and I dare not crave any more from heaven. O curſed deluſion! but rather curſed weakneſs! why did I give way to it? Had I not enough of the world, or was I grown weary of being happy? So ſaying, he falls a weeping: Could I ſhed a flood of tears, ſufficient to waſh away my fault or eaſe me of the remorſe it does create! But why does my diſtracted fancy propoſe impoſſibilies? Is not the ocean ſufficient to rid

me

me of this wretched life? Then adieu, infectious world, thou magician of iniquity! the thoughts of which are now more offenſive, than the moſt nauſeous odour of an old ſepulchre. Here he was going to caſt himſelf into the ſea; but a vaſt large monſter, riſing out of the water, with its terrible jaws quite open, looking at him in a moſt dreadful manner, ſtopped the execution of his deſperate deſign: Thus, death appearing in a different ſhape than he had propoſed to meet him in, frightens away his reſolution of dying: I may, ſaid he, condemn myſelf; but vengeance belongs to God alone, who rejects not tears of repentance, but always extends his mercies towards the penitent; and ſince St. Peter, after thrice denying his Lord and Maſter was by repenting and weeping over his ſin, received again into favour, I hope theſe my weak, but ſincere tokens of repentance will be accepted of, for ever divorcing myſelf from the world, and never thinking of its alluring pleaſures, but to deſpiſe them. And, for the better performance of that pious reſolution, he ſets that woeful day apart (in which he was about to commit that fatal deed) for prayer and faſting: Thus he went home, and having eat nothing ſince the day before, he ſpent the remainder of that in faſting and praying, ſinging penitential pſalms till dark night, that nature urged him to repoſe.

The pains and labour he had been at in the day, climbing up and down the rock, dragging himſelf to-and fro', to come at the boat, having very much racked his limbs; and the diſappointment of his full dependance on the late promiſing ſucceſs, as alſo the tormenting remorſe, and heavy grief, for his ſinful reliance thereon, much fatiguing his mind, rendered ſleep, which is ordained for the refreſhment of nature, of no manner of help to him: His thoughts are continually

tinually disturbed with frightful visions; all his past dangers glare at him, as if threatning their return; but that which terrified him most was, the frightful idea of the terrible monster which rose out of the sea at that instant he was going to plunge himself in it.

Being awaked out of his restless sleep, rather more fatigued than when he lay down, having still the terrible aspect of the sea monster in his mind, he made several reflections on the execrable nature of his intended sin; admiring the immense goodness of Providence, who to deter him from the committing of the enormous act, had ordered that (beyond imagination) terrible object, as the most suitable to the barbarity of his design, to strike into him that terror which the species of death he had fixed upon could not. Thus having with tears acknowledged the enormity of his resolution, he returns Providence thanks for its inestimable goodness, who (notwithstanding his late most ungrateful elopement) preserved him from eternal, as well as temporal ruin: Having paid his devotion, and sung a thanksgiving-psalm, he takes a little nourishment, his spirits being low with his past fatigue and fasting; and as he could not put out of his eyes the terrible aspect of the monster, which was beyond any chimerical conception, he resolves to draw it according to the idea he had in his mind: Perhaps, said he, having often the representation before mine eyes 'twill make the object more familiar and less frightful. Taking therefore pen and ink, and a sheet of parchment, now, said he, how shall I represent what is past imagination to conceive? A form without likeness, and yet comparable to the most terrible part of every frightful creature; a large head, resembling that of a lion, bearing three pair of horns; one pair upright

upright, like that of an antelope; another pair like a wild goats; two more bending backwards; its face armed all round with darts, like a porcupine; vaſt great eyes, ſparkling like a flint ſtruck with a ſteel; its noſe like a wild horſe, always ſnarling; the mouth of a lion, and teeth of a panther; the fences of an elephant, and the tuſks of a wild boar, ſhouldered like a giant, with claws like an eagle, bodied and covered with ſhells like a rhinoceros, and the colour of a crocodile.

Having likened every different part, he proceeds in the repreſentation thereof; which being finiſhed, put him in the greateſt admiration! Sure, ſaid he, if nature had a hand in thy making, it was to aſſemble, in one creature, all the fierceſt and dreadfulleſt animals that are moſt frightful and terrible? Now, perhaps, this being conſtantly before me, may come leſs in my mind. Then fixing it againſt his wall, this, ſaid he, will be alſo a memorandum of my late vow, never to endeavour to wiſh to go from hence, whatever opportunity offers, tho' attended with ever ſo great a probability of ſucceſs, and proſpect of gain; fully ſettling his whole mind and affection on the ſtate and condition heaven has been pleaſed to place him in; reſolving to let nothing enter into his thoughts, but his moſt grateful duty to ſo great a benefactor, who has ſo often and miraculouſly reſcued him from death.

Thus having intirely baniſhed the world out of his mind, which before often diſturbed it, he limits his thoughts within the bounds of his bleſſed poſſeſſion, which affords him more than is ſufficient to make his life happy; where plenty flows on him, and pleaſure attends his deſires; abounding in all things that can gratify his appetite, or delight his fancy: A herd of

delightful antelopes, bounding and playing about his habitation, divert him at home; and in his walks he is entertained with the harmony of divers kinds of ſinging birds; every place he comes at offers him new objects for pleaſure: Thus all ſeems to concur in completing his happineſs.

In this moſt bleſſed ſtate he thinks himſelf as Adam before his fall, having no room for wiſhes, only that every thing may continue in its preſent condition; but it cannot be expected, that fair weather, which ſmiles on his beauty, will not change. The ſun muſt go its courſe, and the ſeaſons take their turn; which conſiderations muſt, for the preſent, admit ſome ſmall care: He is naked, and his tender conſtitution ſuſceptible of the cold; therefore the clothes he was caſt away in being worn out, he is obliged to think of providing ſomething to defend his limbs from the hardneſs of the approaching winter, whilſt it is yet warm. Having conſidered what to make a wrapper of, he concludes upon uſing ſome of the ſame graſs he made the mats of, on which he lay, being ſoft and warm, very fit for that purpoſe: Of this he cuts down a ſufficient quantity, which, when ready to work, he makes ſmall twine with, and plaits it in narrow braids, which he ſews together with ſome of the ſame, and ſhapes a long looſe gown, that covered him to his heels, and a cap of the ſame.

By that time he had finiſhed his winter garb, the weather was grown cold enough for him to put it on. The froſty ſeaſon came on apace, in which there fell ſuch a quantity of ſnow, that he was forced to make a broom, and ſweep it away from about his habitation twice a day; as alſo the ſame he made to the places he had occaſion to go to, toſſing the ſnow on each ſide, which, before the winter was over,

met

met a-top, and covered it all the way; which obliged ed him to keep within-doors for a conſiderable time, and melt ſnow inſtead of water; leſt, going for ſome, he might chance to be buried among the ſnow.

The winter being over, and the ſnow diſſolved, the gay ſpring advances apace, offering nature its uſual aſſiſtance, repairing the damages the late froſt had done; which joyful tidings made every thing ſmile. Quarll, alſo, finding himſelf revived, took his former walks, which the preceding bad weather had kept him from, though there had been no conſiderable ſtorm the winter before.

He having a mind to view the ſea, and being come to the outſide of the north weſt end of the rock, ſees, at the foot thereof, ſomething like part of the body of a large hollow tree, the ends whereof were ſtopped with its own pitch; and the middle, which was ſlit open from end to end, and kept gaping by a ſtick laid acroſs.

This put him in mind of canoes, with which the Indians paddle up and down their lakes and rivers; and being on that ſide of the rock next to the iſland of California, he fancied ſome of them were come to viſit this iſland, tho' not many in number; their canoes holding, at the moſt, but two men; and, for the generality, one only: Yet as ſome of theſe people are accounted great thieves, daily robbing one another, he haſtens home to ſecure what he had; but it was too late: They had been there already, and had taken away the clothes he found in the cheſt; which being, by far, too little for him, hung carelеſly on a pin behind his door. Had they been contented with that, he would not have regarded it; but they carried away ſome of his curious cheſts; and, what

grieved him moſt, the fine bird he had taken ſuch pains to dreſs and ſtuff, and care to preſerve; as alſo his bow and arrows.

Having miſſed theſe things, which he much valued, he haſtens to the outſide of the rock, with his long ſtaff in his hand, in hopes to overtake them before they could get into their canoe; but happened to go too late, they being already got near half a league from the rock: Yet they did not carry away their theft: for there ariſing ſome wind, it made the ſea ſomewhat rough, and overſet their canoe; ſo that what was in it was all loſt but the two Indians, who moſt dextrouſly turned it on its bottom again, and with ſurpriſing activity leaped into it, one at the one ſide, and the other at the oppoſite; ſo that the canoe being trimmed at once, they paddled out of ſight.

Having ſeen as much of them as he could, he walks to the north eaſt ſide, in order to diſcover the effect of the high wind which happened the night before.

Being come to the outſide of the rock, he perceives at a diſtance ſomething like a large cheſt, but having no lid on it. Taking that to be the product of ſome late ſhipwreck, he grieved at the fatal accident: How long, reflected he, will covetouſneſs decoy men to purſue wealth, at the coſt of their precious lives? Has not nature provided every nation and country a ſufficiency for its inhabitants! that they will rove on this moſt dangerous and boiſterous ſea, which may be titled Death's Dominions; many periſhing therein, and not one on it being ſafe.

As he was bewailing their fate, who he imagined had been caſt away, he ſees two men come down the rock, with each a bundle in his arm, who went to that which he had taken to be a cheſt; and, having

put

put their load in it, puſhed it away till come to deeper water; then, having got in it, with a long ſtaff ſhoved it off, till they could row to a long-boat that lay at ſome diſtance behind a jetting part of the rock, which ſcreened it from his ſight, as alſo the ſhip it belonged to.

The ſight of this much amazed him, and made him ceaſe condoling others ſuppoſed loſs, to run home and examine his own; well knowing thoſe bundles he ſaw carried away, muſt needs belong to him; there being no other moveables in the iſland but what were in his lodge.

Being come home, he finds indeed what he ſuſpected: Thoſe villains had moſt ſacrilegiouſly rifled and ranſacked his habitation, not leaving him ſo much as one of the mats to keep his poor body from the ground. His winter garb alſo is gone, and what elſe they could find for their uſe.

The loſs of thoſe things, which he could not be without, filled him with ſorrow: Now, ſaid he, I am in my firſt ſtate of being; naked I came into the world, and naked I ſhall go out of it; at which he fell a weeping.

Having grieved awhile, why, ſaid he, ſhould I thus caſt myſelf down? Is not Providence, who, gave me them, able to give me more! Thus having reſolved before winter to repleniſh his loſs, he reſts himſelf contented, and gives the ruffians evil actions the beſt conſtruction he could. Now I think on it, ſaid he, theſe ſurely are the men, who, about twelve months ſince, would charitably have carried me hence, but could not, for want of neceſſary implements; and now, being better provided, came to accompliſh their hoſpitable deſign; but, not finding me, ſuppoſing I was either dead or gone, took away what was here of

no uſe: Much good may what they have got do them, and may it be of as much uſe to them as it was to me. Thus walks out, in order to cut graſs to dry, and make himſelf new bedding, and a winter-garb.

Having walked about half a mile, he perceives the ſame men coming towards the pond: Heaven be praiſed! ſaid he, here they be ſtill. Now when they ſee I am not gone, nor willing to go, they will return my things, which they are ſenſible I cannot do without, with theſe words he goes up to them.

By this time they had caught the two old ducks, which, being pinioned, could not fly away as the reſt did. He was much vexed to ſee the beſt of his flock thus taken away; yet as he thought they were come to do him ſervice, he could grudge them nothing, that would any-wiſe gratify ſo good an intent. But having returned them thanks for their good-will, he told them he was very happy in the iſland, and had made a vow never to go out of it.

Theſe being Frenchmen, and of an employment where politeneſs is of little uſe, being fiſhermen, and not underſtanding what he ſaid, only laughed in his face, and went on to the purpoſe they came about: Then having as many of the ducks as they could get, they proceeded towards the houſe where they had ſeen the antelopes; ſome of which not running away at their approach, they propoſed to catch hold of them.

Being come to the place where they uſed to feed, which was near the dwelling, the young ones, not being uſed to ſee any men in clothes, nor any body but their maſter, preſently fled; but the two old ones, which he had bred up, were ſo tame, that they ſtood ſtill; only when the men came to them, they kept cloſe to him, which gave the men opportunity to lay

hold

hold of them; when, notwithſtanding Quarll's repeated intreaties, they tied a halter about their horns, and barbarouſly led them away.

Quarll was grieved to the heart to ſee his darlings, which he had taken ſuch care to breed up, and which became the principal part of his delight, following him up and down; and which, by their jumping and playing before him, often diſperſed melancholy thoughts; notwithſtanding all thoſe endearing qualifications, thus haled away, he weeps, and on his knees begs they may be left; and, though they underſtood not his words, his actions were ſo expreſſive and moving, that had they had the humanity of canibals, who eat one another, they would have yielded to ſo melting an object as the poor broken-hearted Quarll was; but the inflexible boors went on, cruelly haling and dragging the poor creatures; which, as if ſenſible of the barbarity of the act, looked back to their afflicted maſter, as craving his aſſiſtance; which at laſt, ſo exaſperated him that he was ſeveral times tempted to lay on the raviſhers with his long ſtaff; but as often was ſtopt by the following conſideration: Shall I, ſaid he, be the deſtruction of my fellow-creatures, to reſcue out of their hands, animals of which I have an improving ſtore left, and deprive them of their healths, and perhaps of their lives, to recover what coſt me nought? Let them go with what they have, and the merit of their deed be their reward. Thus he walks about melancholy, bemoaning his poor antelopes fate, and his own misfortune: They were uſed to liberty, ſaid he, which they now are deprived of, and for which they will pine and die, which, for their ſake, I cannot but with; for life without liberty is a continual death.

As he was walking, thinking (as 'tis uſual after

the loſs of any thing one loves) of the pleaſure he had during the enjoyment, the ruffians, having ſecured the poor animals, came back with ropes in their hands. What do they want next? ſaid he, have they not all they deſire; would they carry away my habitation alſo? Sure they have no deſign on my perſon: If ſo, they will not take it ſo eaſily as they did my dear antelopes. Thus he reſolved to exerciſe his quarter-ſtaff, if they offered to lay hands on him. The villains, whoſe deſign was to bind him, and ſo carry him away, ſeeing him armed and reſolute, did not judge it ſafe for them to advance within the reach of his weapon, but keep at ſome diſtance, divining how to ſeize him.

Quarll, who, by their conſulting, gueſſed at their deſign, not thinking proper to let them come to a reſolution, makes at the neareſt who immediately takes to his heels; and then to the next, who immediately does the ſame: Thus he follows them about for a conſiderable time; but they divided in order to tire him with running, till the night approaching, and the wind riſing, made them fear their retreat might be dangerous, if they deferred it; ſo that they went clear away: Which being all he deſired, he returned, as ſoon as he ſaw them in the long boat, which they rowed to their ſhip that lay at anchor ſome diſtance from the rocks.

Thoſe wretches being gone, he returns heaven thanks for his deliverance; and as his bridge had favoured their coming, he pulls it off, and only laid it over when he had a mind to view the ſea, and goes home to eat a bit, having not, as yet, broken his faſt. Having, therefore, eaten ſome of his roots and cheeſe, and being wearied with hunting thoſe boors, he conſults how to lie, his bed and bedding being gone, as

alſo

alſo his winter-gown, and the nights being, as yet, cold: However, after a ſmall time of conſideration, he concludes to lie in the lodge, which was left vacant by the ſtolen antelopes abſence; whoſe litter being made of the ſame graſs as his mats were, he lay both ſoft and warm.

When laid down, being ſorely fatigued, he ſoon fell aſleep; and as the plunderers had the preceding day taken up his cares, they filled his mind in the night; he has them continually before his eyes, ſometimes with his beloved antelopes in their pilfering hands; at other times barbarouſly haling them by their horns with a halter, which they ought to have about their own necks. Theſe acts of auſterity provoking his anger, and urging him on to revenge, he lifts his ſtaff, which on a ſudden is turned into Hercules's club: Startled to ſee that wonderful change, he ſtops from laying on the intended blow: reſcuing, ſaid he, my darling animals, I ſhall loſe my precious and ineſtimable peace of mind: What can atone for the life of a man? Whilſt he was making theſe reflections, the men got clear away with the fowls and antelopes, leaving him in deep melancholy: Thus, as he was bewailing his loſs, calling to mind the agreeable paſtimes they had often been to him, and the many anxious hours he had diſperſed with their diverſion, a gentlewoman appeared before him, of a moſt agreeable, yet grave countenance, dreſſed in plain dove coloured clothes, in moſt places threadbare, and in others patched with divers ſorts of ſtuffs. yet genteel and becoming. He ſtarts at her appearing, wondering what ſhe could come for, having nothing more to loſe: I come not, ſaid ſhe, to ſeek ought from thee, but to reſtore what thou haſt loſt. He, being overjoyed at the words, looks about, expecting

his beloved antelopes, and what elſe the men had taken away; but, ſeeing nothing, he thought that viſion proceeded from vapours, which the great grief for his late loſs had occaſioned; and falls a thinking, till he was a ſecond time interrupted by her, bidding him look her in the face. Be ſatisfied, be ſatisfied, woman, ſaid he: Why, I neither know thee, nor what thou meaneſt. Well then, replied ſhe, I'll inform thee of both: I am Patience whom all the world ſtrive to grieve, and whom none can provoke; and what I promiſe to reſtore thee is content, which thou throweſt away after worthleſs things. So ſhe vaniſhes. At which he awakes.

Having made reflections upon the latter part of his dream, the firſt part thereof being but a repreſentation of what happened the day before, he makes this application: This, ſaid he, is a check for my diſcompoſing that peace upon ſuch a frivolous account, which by providence was intended I ſhould enjoy, having ſupplied me with all neceſſaries to maintain it: He therefore makes a reſolution never to be vexed, let what will happen; but with patience ſubmit to the will of GOD, who has the direction of all things. Then, having paid his uſual devotion, he goes into the kitchen, in order to breakfaſt, and afterwards to take his cuſtomary walk. Whilſt he was eating, there aroſe a noiſe in the air, as proceeding from a quantity of rooks, jackdaws, crows, and ſuch-like birds whoſe common notes he was acquainted with; and as the noiſe approached he had the curioſity to go and ſee what was the matter, but was prevented by the coming of a large fowl, which flew over his head as he was going out: He turned back to gaze at the bird, whoſe beauty ſeized him with admiration; the pleaſure of ſeeing ſo charming a creature quite

put

put out of his mind the curioſity of looking from whence proceeded the diſagreeable noiſe without; which ceaſing as ſoon as the bird was ſheltered, made him imagine thoſe carrion birds had been chaſing that beautiful fowl, which, ſeeing itſelf out of danger, ſtood ſtill, very calm and compoſed; which gave him the opportunity of making a diſcuſſion of every individual agreement which compoſed ſo delightful an object: It was about the bigneſs and form of a ſwan, almoſt headed like it, only the bill was not ſo long, nor ſo broad, and red like coral; his eyes like thoſe of a hawk, his head of a mazarine-blue, and on the top of it a tuft of ſhining gold-coloured feathers, which ſpread over it, hanging near three inches beyond, all round; its breaſt, face, and part of its neck, milk-white, curiouſly ſpeckled with ſmall black ſpots, a gold-coloured circle about it; its back and neck behind of a fine crimſon, ſpeckled with purple; its legs and feet the ſame colour as its bill; its tail long and round, ſpreading like that of a peacock, compoſed of ſix rows of feathers, all of different colours, which made a moſt delightful mixture.

Having ſpent ſeveral minutes in admiring the bird, he lays peas, and crumbled roots, both roaſted and boiled, before it; as alſo, water in a ſhell, withdrawing, to give it liberty to eat and drink; and ſtood out peeping to ſee what it would do: Which, being alone, having looked about, picks a few peas, and drinks heartily; then walks towards the door, in a compoſed and eaſy manner, much like that of a cock.

Quarll, being at the outſide, was dubious whether he ſhould detain him, or let him go; his affection for that admirable creature equally prompts him to both: He cannot bear the thoughts of parting with ſo lovely an object, nor harbour that of depriving it of its li-

berty, which it ſo implicitely intruſted him withal. Thus, after a ſmall pauſe, generoſity prevails over ſelf-pleaſure: Why ſhould I, ſaid he, make the place of its refuge its priſon! He therefore makes room for it to go, which, with a ſlow pace, walks out; and having looked about a ſmall time, mounts up a conſiderable height, and then takes its courſe north-weſt.

The bird being gone out of ſight, he made reflections on the adventure, which he judges to be a prognoſtic of ſome rebellion or revolution in Europe: Whereupon, having recommended his native country to the protection of heaven, begging a continuation of peace, and an end of thoſe unhappy diviſions, which often prove the ruin of nations; he goes and ſets down, in the memorial-book, the tranſactions of that year being 1689, and the 15th ſince his being in the iſland, which proved more fruitful in events than any of the preceding. The picture which he had drawn of the terrible ſea-monſter, being againſt his wall, having accuſtomed himſelf to the frightful object that conſtantly diſturbed his mind, he draws that of the two ruffians, committing their barbarity, and hangs it by the place: the idea whereof being to him more terrible than the preceding, he could not ſuffer it to be long in his ſight; but takes it down, and draws, on the backſide of it, the villains on a gibbet: Now, ſaid he, this being what ought to be the end and explanation of the hiſtory, ſhall now be the right ſide of the picture.

There happening nothing the remainder of the year, worthy of record, he employs it in his cuſtomary occupations; as pruning and watering his lodge and dairy, making his mats to lie on, as alſo his winter-garb; every day milking his antelopes and goats; making

making now and-then butter and cheeſe, attending his nets, and ſuch-like neceſſary employments.

The mean time, the French mariners, who, probably, got money by what they had taken from him the year before, returned, it being much about the ſame ſeaſon; and being reſolved to take him away, and all they could make any thing of, out of the iſland, were provided with hands and implements to accompliſh their deſign; as ropes to bind what they could get alive, and guns to ſhoot what they could not come at, ſaws and hatchets to cut down logwood and brazil, pick-axes and ſhovels to dig up orris-roots, and others of worth, which they imagined the iſland produced; likewiſe flat-bottomed boats to tow in ſhallow water, where others could not come; and thus by degrees to load their ſhip with booty: But ever-watchful Providence blaſted their evil projects, and confounded their devices at the very inſtant they thought themſelves ſure of ſucceſs: The implements in a flat-bottomed boat were towed to the very foot of the rock, by a young fellow, who being lighter than a man, was thought fitteſt to go with the tools, which pretty well loaded the boat.

Their materials being landed, to their great ſatisfaction, the men on board embarked in two more of the ſame ſort of boats; but were no ſooner in them, but a ſtorm aroſe, which daſhed their ſlender bottom to pieces, and waſhed them into the ſea, in which they periſhed, overſetting alſo the flat bottomed boat on ſhore, with the load, and the lad underneath it.

The ſtorm being over, which laſted from about eight in the morning till almoſt twelve at noon, Quarll, according to his cuſtom, went to ſee if he could perceive any damage done by the late tempeſt, and if any, diſtreſſed by it, ſtood in want of help.

Being

Being at that ſide of the rock he uſed to viſit, he could ſee nothing but a few fiſhes and ſhells the ſea had left in the clifts: If this, ſaid he, be all the damage that has been done, make me thankful; it will recruit me with freſh fiſh and utenſils. Going to the N. W. part, where he ſees a battered boat, floating with the keel upwards, this, ſaid he, bodes ſome miſchief; but thought it not to be of any conſequence. Having gone about fifty yards further he 'ſpies a ſmall barrel at the foot of the rock, with ſeveral planks and fragments of a ſhip, floating with the tide: Alas! ſaid he, theſe are too evident proofs of a ſhipwreck, to hope otherwiſe. As he was looking about, he hears a voice cry out, much like that of a man, at ſome diſtance, behind a part of the rock: Being advanced a ſmall matter beyond where he was, heaven be praiſed! ſays he, there is ſomebody, whom I am luckily come to ſave, and he moſt fortunately come to be my companion: I cannot but rejoice at the event, though I heartily grieve for the accident. Hailening to the place where he thought the cries came from, which, as he advanced, he could diſcern to be too ſhrill for a man's voice, certainly, ſaid he, this muſt be ſome woman by the noiſe. This ſet his blood a glowing; his heart alters its motion: Now, ſaid he, joyful providence has completed my happineſs: I ſhall have a companion, and a help mate; and goes on with freſh vigour, as though he had recovered his ſtrength, and got new limbs: The rough and ſavage rock, which was before, in a manner, inacceſſible, is now made eaſy to walk: He climbs the higheſt places with activity, and goes down the ſteep as nimbly; and ſoon arrived where he judged the perſon to be: Yet, ſeeing nothing, but what he took to be a cheſt, began to be diſheartened: Sure, ſaid he, this is not a ſecond illuſion,

to

to decoy my fancy after what is not to be had! Thus his joy on a ſudden turned into deep melancholy; but the creature underneath, who, having heard ſome noiſe near at hand, ceaſed crying, to liſten; yet, ſeeing nobody come, cries out again ſomewhat louder than before.

This revived him quite, and recals his hopes: It is a woman, ſaid he, and in that cheſt; when, going to break it open, he ſtops on a ſudden: What am I going to do? How do I know the cauſe of her being thus locked up? Though women are, in a manner, become a merchandize, yet they never are packed up, or cheſted: She muſt be in there for a puniſhment, which in ſome countries is inflicted on witches. The boy, who heard a voice, calls out in French, which Quarll not underſtanding, he was afraid to let it out; but his mentioning Chriſt being intelligible to him, made him change his opinion: For Chriſt's ſake, doth ſhe ſay? That holy name witches ſeldom make uſe of; however, in that name I'll let her out. If ſhe be under condemnation, was I not ſo? Had ſhe by heaven been decreed to die, ſhe would not have been here. At which words, with his ſtaff he endeavoured to break that which he took to be the lid of the cheſt, but proved the bottom; and, as he was ſtriking the boy underneath, calling him to turn it up, thruſt his hand under the ſide, which he perceiving, though he underſtood him not, ſtood ſtill: Finding his miſtake, this, ſaid he, is a flat bottomed boat, ſuch as the Frenchmen uſed the year before, when they came and plundered me: Now am I ſafe, if I turn it up? Doubtleſs they are come in great numbers. Pauſing awhile, and the lad ſtill continuing his moan, he was moved to compaſſion; and having conſidered the boat could not hold any great number, he ventures: Let what will,

will come on it, or who will be under, for the poor woman's ſake I'll relieve them, there cannot be many men. However, I'll let but one out at a time: If he be miſcheivous, I am able to deal with him. At this, he puts the end of the ſtaff where he had ſeen the hand, and lifts it about a foot from the ground: Out of the opening immediately creeps the boy, who on his knees immediately falls a begging and weeping, expecting death every moment, as being the merited puniſhment for the evil purpoſe he came about. Quarll, who expected there was a woman beſides fearing the gap the youth came out would be too uneaſy for her to come out through, made motions for the boy to help him, in order to ſet the boat on its bottom; which he did. Quarll, ſeeing the implements, inſtead of the woman, was as much vexed as diſappointed: His countenance changes; ſometimes he looks at the things, and then at the boy; who ſeeing him appear angry, thought of nothing but preſent death, and again falls on his knees, holding up his hands, almoſt drowned in tears, begging for mercy in ſuch a moving manner, that Quarll could not forbear ſhedding ſome tears; and though the late diſappointment of his propoſed happineſs, and the ſight of the preparations made for his intended ruin had moved him to anger againſt that mercenary nation; he helps the young fellow up by the hand; and the night coming on apace, he takes one of the hatchets that lay by, and gave another to the boy, then falls a knocking the boat to pieces, and directed him to do the ſame; which he accordingly did.

The boat being demoliſhed, they carried the boards up higher on the rock, as alſo the reſt of the things; leſt, in the night, ſome ſtorm ſhould riſe, which might waſh them back into the ſea; it being then too late

to

to bring them away. Having done, each of them took up what they could carry, and ſo went home. The young Frenchman, finding a kinder treatment, than either he deſerved or expected, was extraordinary ſubmiſſive and tractable; which made Quarll the more kind and mild; and inſtead of condemning his evil attempt, he commiſerated his misfortune, and in room of reſentment ſhewed him kindneſs: Thus, having given him of what he had to eat, he puts him to bed in his lodge, wherein he lay, till he had got his mats made up; then went to bed himſelf, but could not ſleep for thinking of his late diſappointment, which intercepted thoſe pleaſures he ſo much depended on, thinking himſelf ſure of a female partner, who, in ſharing happineſs with him, would have much added to his bliſs.

Having toſſed and tumbled a conſiderable time, he begins to grow heavy ſpirited; nature is fatigued and muſt be refreſhed: Thus he falls aſleep; and, as his hopes the preceding day had indulged his deſire, his mind is ſo impreſſed in the night with the idea of a female object, that he dreams he has her by his ſide, condoling her for the dangers ſhe has gone through, congratulating her lucky eſcape, and greeting her happy arrival into ſo bleſſed an abode.

Thus expreſſing his joy, in poſſeſſing the only object which could complete his happineſs, with all the ſoftneſs and eloquence the moſt paſſionate love can impreſs, he reaches out his arms to embrace the lovely phantom his inclination had bred in his imagination; but, having groped awhile, and finding nothing, he ſtarts out of his ſleep at this moſt ſhocking diſappointment.

Being awaked, the late deluſive pleaſures, called to his mind the real, which he had formerly enjoyed, and

and which he did then hanker after: What is man, ſaid he, without that part of himſelf, out of which God made him a mate? Adam, though poſſeſſing all the world, was ſtill wanting till he had a woman to keep him company: In this melancholy diſpoſition he again falls aſleep, and dreams afreſh; in which his imagination gluts his inclination with thoſe pleaſures it ſo much deſired: Fruition, to him, is but like liquor to a man ſick of a violent fever, which only for a minute quenches his heat, but augments the diſtemper, and at laſt deſtroys the patient. Exceſſive love is but ſhort lived; what is violent is not laſting; time with pleaſure runs faſt away, but dwells long with ſorrow; cares weaken love, and indifferences breed diſcontent; the jarrings follow, which introduce diviſion, the mother of poverty.

Theſe diſmal accidents, incumbent to unconſiderate love, coming into the amourous dreamer's mind, his great heat being quenched, he took time to conſider his condition; and ſeeing himſelf liable to them, is ſtruck with ſuch a fear as blots all pleaſures out of his thoughts, and fills them with dread of future cares, which he unadviſedly run himſelf into, and all for the ſake of a ſhort pleaſure.

Starting out of his ſleep at the approach of thoſe ſad troubles, he returns heaven thanks, that it was but a dream; and begs pardon for having given ſo much way to the concupiſcence of fleſh; getting up, though ſooner than ordinary, leſt he ſhould fall aſleep, and dream again of women.

Having walked about till he thought it time for the boy to riſe, he calls him up, and takes him to the place that he uſually went every morning and evening to ſing pſalms; where the youth being come, and hearing ſo many different voices, and ſeeing no body,

body, was ſcared out of his wits, and took to his heels, making towards the rock as faſt as he could: But as he was not acquainted with the eaſieſt and moſt practicable parts thereof, Quarll had made an end of his, pſalm, and overtook him before he could get to the ſea-ſide, into which he certainly would have caſt himſelf, at the fright; but Quarll, who by the boy's ſtaring, gueſſed his diſorder, not having the benefit of the language, endeavoured to calm him by his pleaſing countenance, and prevented his drowning himſelf; but could not keep off a violent fit the fright had occaſioned, which held him ſeveral minutes.

The fit being over, he and the boy took away at divers times, the remains of the cheſt, and of what was in it, which they could not carry home the day before: Then taking up two guns, now, ſaid he, theſe unlucky inſtruments, which were intended for deſtruction, ſhall be employed for the preſervation of that they were to deſtroy, taking them to his lodge, he ſets them at each ſide of the door; then being dinner-time, he ſtrikes a light, and ſets the boy to make a fire, whilſt he made ſome of the fiſh fit to fry, which he picked up upon the rock the evening before; then takes dripping, he ſaved when he roaſted any fleſh, to fry with them. The boy, who had lived ſome time in Holland, where they uſed much butter, ſeeing dripping employed in room thereof, thought to pleaſe his maſter in making ſome; and as he had ſeen milk and cream in the dairy arbour, wanting a churn only, there being a ſmall rundlet lying by empty, he takes one of the ends of it, in which, the next day, he beat butter.

Quarll, ſeeing the youth induſtrious, begins to fancy him, notwithſtanding the averſion he had conceived

ved for his nation, ever ſince the ill treatment he had received from his countrymen; and, as ſpeech is one of the moſt neceſſary faculties to breed and maintain fellowſhip, he took pains to teach him Engliſh.

The lad, being acute and ingenious, was ſoon made to underſtand it, and in ſix months capable to ſpeak it ſufficiently, ſo as to give his maſter a relation of his late coming, and to what intent. The men, ſaid he, who about one year ſince carried away from hence ſome antelopes, with extraordinary ducks, and ſeveral rarities, which they ſaid belonged to a monſtrous Engliſh hermit, whoſe hair and beard covered all his body, having got a great deal of money by ſhewing them, encouraged others to come; whereupon ſeveral, joining together, hired a ſhip to fetch away the hermit, and what elſe they could find; therefore brought with them tools, and guns, to ſhoot what they could not take alive. Barbarous wretches! replied he, to kill my dear antelopes and ducks! Pray, what did they intend to do with me? Why, ſaid the boy, to make a ſhow of you. To make a ſhow of me! Sordid wretches! Is a chriſtian then ſuch a rarity amongſt them? Well, and what were the ſaws and hatchets for? To cut down your houſe, which they intended to make a drinking-booth of. Ho, monſtrous! what time and nature has been fifteen years a completing, they would have ruined in a moment: Well, thanks to Providence, their evil deſign is averted. Pray, what is become of thoſe ſacrilegious perſons? They are all drowned, ſaid the boy. Then, replies he, the heavens are ſatisfied, and I avenged: But how cameſt thou to eſcape? for thou waſt with them. No, replied the youth, I was upon the rock when their boat was daſhed againſt it, and was overſet

ſet with the ſame ſea, under the flat-bottomed boat, where you found me. That was a happy overſet for thee. Well, is there no gratitude due to Providence for thy eſcape? Due to Providence! ſaid he, why, I thought You had ſaved me: I'm ſure You let me out. Yes, replied Quarll; but I was ſent by Providence for that purpoſe. That was kindly done too, ſaid the boy: Well, when I ſee him, I will thank him: Doth he live hereabout? Poor ignorant creature! replied Quarll; why Providence is every where: What! didſt thou never hear of Providence? What religion art thou? Religion! anſwered the youth; I don't know what you mean: I am a fiſherman by trade, which my father lived by. Well, ſaid Quarll, did he teach the nothing elſe? no prayers? Prayers! replied the lad: Why, fiſhermen have no time to pray; that's for them who have nothing elſe to do: Poor folks muſt work, and get money; that's the way of our town. Covetous wretches! Well, ſaid he, I grudge them not what they poſſeſs, ſince it is all the happineſs they aſpire at; but thou ſhalt learn to pray, which will be of far more advantage to thee than work, both here and hereafter: From which time he begins to teach him the Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Commandments; as alſo the principles of the chriſtian religion; all which inſtructions the youth taking readily, won his affection the more: He likewiſe taught him to ſing pſalms, which farther qualified him to be his companion in ſpiritual exerciſes, as well as in temporal occupations.

Now, having company, he is obliged to enlarge his bed, the lodge being wanting for his antelopes againſt breeding-time: He adds, therefore, to his mats. His other proviſions alſo wanting to be augmented, and he having both tools and boards, out of the flat

boat

boat which he had taken to pieces! he and the lad went about making large boxes to ſalt fleſh and fiſh in; then, with the boards that were left, they made a table for his dwelling that he had before, and one for his kitchen; as alſo ſhelves in the room of thoſe that were made of wicker: Then, having recruited his ſhell utenſils, that were ſtolen the year before, he was completely furniſhed with all manner of conveniencies; and, providence ſupplying him daily with other neceſſaries, there was no room left him for wiſhes, but for thankſgiving, which they daily moſt religiouſly paid.

In this moſt happy ſtate they lived in peace and concord the ſpace of ten years, unanimouſly doing what was to be done, as it lay in each of their ways, without relying on one another.

Quarll, who before, though alone and deprived of ſociety (the principal comfort of life) thought himſelf bleſſed, now cannot expreſs his happineſs, there being none in the world to be compared to it, heartily praying he might find no alteration until death: But the young man, not having met with ſo many diſappointments in the world as he, had not quite withdrawn his affection from it; his mind ſometimes will run upon his native country, where he has left his relations, and where he cannot help wiſhing to be himſelf: Thus, opportunity offering itſelf one day, as he went to get oyſters, to make ſauce for ſome freſh cod fiſh which Quarll was dreſſing, he ſaw, at a diſtance, a ſhip; at which his heart fell a panting; his pulſes double their motion; his blood grows warmer and warmer, till at laſt, inflamed with deſire of getting at it, he lays down the bag he brought to put the oyſters in, as alſo the inſtrument to dredge them up with, and takes to ſwimming. The men on board, having ſpied him

out,

out, ſent their boat to take him up; ſo he went away without taking his leave of him he had received ſo much good from; who, having waited a conſiderable time, fearing ſome accident would befal him, leaves his cooking, and goes to ſee for him; and, being come at the place where he was to get the oyſters, he ſees the bag and inſtrument lie, and nobody with them. Having called ſeveral times without being anſwered, various racking fears tortured his mind: Sometimes he doubts he is fallen in ſome hole in the rock, there being many near that place where the oyſters were: He therefore with his ſtaff, which he always carried with him when he went abroad, at the other ſide of the rock grappled in every one round the place; and, feeling nothing, he concludes ſome ſea-monſter had ſtolen him away, and, weeping, condemns himſelf as the cauſe of this fatal accident; reſolving, for the future, to puniſh himſelf by denying his appetite; and only eat to ſupport nature, and not to pleaſe his palate.

Having given over hopes of getting him again, he returns home in the greateſt of afflictions, reſolving to faſt till that time the next day; but, happening to look weſt-ward, in which was the point the wind ſtood he perceives ſomething like a boat at a great diſtance: wiping the tears off his eyes, and looking ſtedfaſtly, he diſcovers a ſail beyond it, which quite altered the motive of his former fear: No monſter, ſaid he, hath devoured him; 'tis too plain a caſe, that he has a villainouſly left me: But what could I expect of his ſon, who had projected ſuch evil againſt me? So ſaying, he went home, and made an end of dreſſing his dinner; and afterwards hangs up the picture which he had taken down upon his account, being the emblem of what he deſerved; reſting himſelf contented, being

ing but as he was before, and rather better; ſince he had more conveniencies, and tools to till his ground, and dig up his roots with. Having recommended himſelf to Providence, he reſumes his uſual works and recreations, reſolving that no cares ſhall mar his happineſs for the future, being out of all theſe irreſiſtible temptations way, in which the world abounds, and daily lays the beſt men's hopes in the duſt.

Being again alone, the whole buſineſs of the houſe lies upon his hands; he now muſt prune and trim his habitation, that daily harbours him, being made of fine growing plants, which yearly ſhoot out young branches: This makes them grow out of ſhape. He muſt alſo till the ground; ſet and gather his peaſe and beans in their ſeaſon; milk and feed his antelopes daily; make butter and cheeſe at proper times; dig up his roots; fetch in fuel and water, when wanted attend his nets; go eagle-neſting; and every day dreſs his own victuals: All which neceſſary occupations, beſides the time dedicated for morning and evening devotions, kept him wholly employed; which made his renewed ſolitude leſs irkſome. And, having walked all that afternoon to divert his thoughts, admiring all the way the wonderful works of nature both in the ſurpriſing rocks which ſurrounded the iſland, and in the delightful creatures, and admirable plants, that are in it; being weary with walking, he returns home, thanking kind Providence for ſettling him in ſo bleſſed a place, and in his way calls at his inviſible choir; where, having ſung a thankſgiving pſalm, and his uſual evening-hymn, he goes to ſupper, and then to bed, with a thoroughly contented mind; which occaſions pleaſant dreams, to entertain his thoughts.

During his ſleep, his fancy is delighted with being

in

in nature's garden of pleaſure, where none but her friends are permitted to enter.

The place appeared very ſpacious, and of admirable form; full of all ſorts of nature's works, both animals, vegetables, and minerals, every individual thing in perfection: And though ſome were diſtant, yet all appeared as at hand.

The lofty trees, which ſtood on level ground, covered with curious graſs, embalmed with many different-coloured flowers, exceeding in beauty any carpet that the moſt expert artiſt could make, ſpread their branchy arms over creatures of all kinds, which lay beneath their delightful ſhades: There the bold lion lies by the innocent lamb; the fierce panther near the harmleſs ſheep; the ravenous wolf with the mild goat; leopard and deer, tyger and hare, repoſed together in peace; on the trees, eagles, vultures, falcons and hawks, quietly perched with the turtle and the dove.

Theſe moſt agreeable objects, joined with the delightful noiſe of the fountains falling into their baſons, and the purling ſtreams running their courſe, together with the various harmonious notes of divers kinds of ſinging-birds, put him into an exſtacy: Sure, ſaid he, this is the garden of Eden, out of which unfortunate Adam was caſt after his fall, as being a dwelling only for innocence.

Having walked a little way, there being on every ſide curious lanes, every one affording new objects of admiration, he comes to a walk, edged with orange and lemon-trees, full of fruit and bloſſoms, at the foot of which was a narrow bank bordered with jonquils, tuberoſes, iacinths, and other delightful flowers, both for ſight and ſmell: At the end of it there was

an arbour of the ſame, but ſo beautiful, that at firſt ſight he took it for a tapeſtry the moſt expert artiſt had exerted himſelf in making, to ſhew the curioſity of trade, and greatneſs of his ſkill: In it there ſat three ladies of uncommon beauty; the middle moſt, who was the luſtieſt, appeared to be the eldeſt, being of a moſt ſedate countenance, a moderate number of years having both eſtabliſhed her judgment, and ſettled her features: She, at her right hand, ſeemed to be of a weaker conſtitution; ſhe had in her hand an olive-branch bearing fruit, which, when gathered, was immediately ſucceded with bloſſoms; ſo that it never was without the one or the other: The lady who ſat on the left-ſide, was more jolly and gay, yet looked ſome what careful: She had in her hand a long veſſel, broad at one end, and ſharp at the other, like a horn, bending towards the point, full of all ſorts of fruits.

Having ſtood ſtill a ſhort ſpace, looking at thoſe ladies, thinking it ill manners to interrupt their converſation; they, perceiving his modeſty would not permit him to advance, roſe up, and went another way, to give him the opportunity of viewing the garden: He accordingly went quite round, till come to the place where he had begun his walk; where he ſaw a ſtately cock, of an extraordinary ſize, ſtrutting from animal to animal, taking from moſt of them ſomething whilſt they were aſleep; which having ſecured, he falls a crowing in ſuch a loud manner, that he ſtartled all the other creatures; which, being awake, and every one miſſing ſomething, challenged him with it: But he, having crowed a ſecond time in an inſulting and daring manner, ſtrutted moſt haughtily away; at which the loſers, being much offended, conſulted together on means to retake by force, what he had in ſo clandeſtine a manner taken from them; chuſing the lion for their director: But the watchful cock, which, whilſt

whilſt they were indulging themſelves, carefully made ſufficient proviſion to maintain what he had done, bid them all defiance.

There happening a great noiſe of ſqueeling, it waked him out of his dream; and his mind being impreſſed with notions of war, it at firſt ſeized him with terror: But being ſomewhat ſettled, and the noiſe ſtill continuing, he perceived it proceeded from the two different kinds of monkeys in the iſland, which were fighting for the wild pomgranates that the high wind had ſhook off the trees the proceding night, which was very boiſtrous.

Having gueſſed the occaſion of the debate, he gets up, in order to go and quell their differenc, by dividing amongſt them the cauſe thereof: Getting up, he opens the door, at the outſide of which, an old monkey of each ſort were quietly waiting his levee, to intice him to come, as he once before did, and put an end to their bloody war.

He was not a little ſurpriſed to ſee two ſuch inveterate enemies, who at other times never meet without fighting, at that juncture agree ſo well.

That moſt ſurpriſing ſign of reaſon in thoſe brutes, which, knowing his deciſion would compoſe their comrades difference, came to implore it, put him upon theſe reflections: Would princes, ſaid he, be but reaſonable, as thoſe which by nature are irrational, how much blood and money would be ſaved! Having admired the uneaſineſs of thoſe poor creatures, which ſtill went a few ſteps forward, and then backward to him; he was in hopes to decoy one or both into his lodge, by throwing meat to them: But thoſe exemplary animals, hearing their fellows in trouble, had no regard to their ſeparate intereſt, taking no notice of what he gave them; but kept moving to-and-again

w'th all the tokens of uneaſineſs they could expreſs: Which ſo moved him, that he haſtened to the place; where his preſence cauſed immediately a ceſſation of arms, and each party moved a conſiderable diſtance off each other, waiting his ſharing the wind-falls; which being done, they quietly took that heap which lay next each kind, and went to their different quarters.

This accident, which in ſome manner made out his dream of wars, brought it alſo freſh into his mind, which was full of cares about his country, which he much feared, if any ſhould happen in Europe, would be involved therein, and calling to remēmberance the indigent diſpoſition he left it in, he feared it would lay it open to ſome uſurping prince's power: But leſt farther ſpeculation ſhould occaſion evil prognoſtication to diſturb his peace, he leaves the event of all things to the direction of Providence, and goes home to ſet down his dream, and the year he dreamed it, which was in 1690.

Fourteen years more being paſt, every thing keeping its natural courſe, there happened nothing extraordinary, each ſucceeding year renewing the pleaſures the preceding had produced: Thunders and high winds being frequent, though not equally violent, he thought it not material to record them, or their effects; as blowing and throwing fiſhes, ſhells, empty veſſels, battered cheſts, &c. upon the rock; only tranſactions and events wonderful and uncommon: And there happened a moſt ſurpriſing one a few days after, which though of no great moment, is as worthy of record as any of far greater concern; being a wonderful effect of Providence, manifeſted in a miraculous manner, though not to be ſaid ſupernatural.

One morning, when he had roaſted a parcel of thoſe

thoſe roots which he uſed to eat inſtead of bread, and this he commonly did once a week, it eating beſt when ſtale; having ſpread them on his table and cheſt to cool, he went out to walk, leaving his door open to let the air in.

His walk, though graced with all the agreeables nature could adorn it with, to make it delightful; a graſs carpet, embroidered with beautiful flowers, of many different colours and ſmells, under his feet, to tread on; before, and on each ſide of him, fine lofty trees, of various forms and heights, clothed with pleaſant green leaves, trimmed with rich bloſſoms of many colours, to divert his eye; a number of various ſorts of melodious ſinging birds perching in their moſt lovely ſhades, as though nature had ſtudied to excel man's brighteſt imagination, and exquiſiteneſs of art: Yet all theſe profuſeneſſes of nature's wonders are not ſufficient to keep away or expel anxious thought from his mind. It runs upon his dear antelopes, the darling heads of his preſent ſtock, which he took ſuch care to bring up, and were become ſo engaging, always attending him in thoſe fine walks; adding, by their ſwift races, active leapings, and other uncommon diverſions to the natural pleaſantneſs of the place; which now, by their moſt lamented abſence, is become a dull memorandum of the barbarous manner in which they were raviſhed away from him.

In theſe melancholy thoughts, which his loneſomeneſs every now and then created, he returns home, where Providence had left a remedy for his grievance: A companion, far exceeding any he ever had, waits his return; which was a beautiful monkey of the fineſt kind, and the moſt complete of the ſort, as tho' made to manifeſt the unparalleled ſkill of nature, is

ſent him by Providence, to diſſipate his melancholy.

Being come to his lodge, and beholding that wonderful creature, and in his own poſſeſſion, at the fartheſt end of it, and him at the enterance thereof to oppoſe its flight, if offered, he is at once filled with joy and admiration: Long, ſaid he, I endeavoured in vain to get one, and would have been glad of any, though of the worſt kind, and even the meaneſt of the ſort; and here kind Providence has ſent me one of an unparalleled beauty.

Having a conſiderable time admired the beaſt, which all the while ſtood unconcerned, now-and-then eating of the roots that lay before him, he ſhuts the door, and goes in with a reſolution of ſtaying within all day, in order to tame him, which he hoped would be no difficult matter, his diſpoſition being already pretty familiar, little thinking that Providence, who ſent him thither, had already qualified him for the commiſſion he bore; which having found out by the creature's ſurprizing docility, he returns his benefactor his moſt hearty thanks for that miraculous gift.

This moſt wonderful animal having by its ſurprizing tractability, and good-nature, joined to its matchleſs handſomeneſs, gained its maſter's love, beyond what is uſual to place on any ſort of beaſts; he thought himſelf doubly recompenſed for all his former loſſes, eſpecially for that of his late ungrateful companion, who, notwithſtanding all the obligations he held from him, baſely left him, at a time he might be moſt helpful: And, as he fancied his dear Beaufidelle (for ſo he called that admirable creature) had ſome ſort of reſemblance to the picture he framed of him, he takes it down thinking it unjuſt to bear in his ſight

that

that vile object which could not in any-wiſe claim a likeneſs to ſo worthy a creature as his beloved monkey.

One day, as this lovely animal was officiating the charge it had of its own accord taken, being gone for wood, as wont to do when wanted, he finds in his way a wild pomgranate, whoſe extraordinary ſize and weight had cauſed it to fall of the tree: He takes it home, and then returns for his fagot; in which time Quarll, wiſhing the goodneſs of the inſide might anſwer its outward beauty, cuts it open; and, finding it of a dull luſciouſneſs; too flat for eating, imagined it might be uſed with things of an acid and ſharp taſte: Having therefore boiled ſome water, he puts it into a veſſel, with a ſort of an herb which is of the taſte and nature of creſſes, and ſome of the pomgranate, letting them infuſe ſome time, now-and-then ſtirring it; which the monkey having taken notice of, did the ſame: But one very hot day, happening to lay the veſſel in the ſun, made it turn ſour.

Quarll, who very much wanted vinegar in his ſauces, was well pleaſed with the accident, and ſo continued the ſouring of the liquor, which proving excellent, he made a five-gallon veſſel of it; having ſeveral, which at times he found upon the rock.

Having now ſtore of vinegar, and being a great lover of pickles, which he had learnt to make by ſeeing his laſt wife, who was an extraordinary cook, and made of all ſorts every year; calling to mind he had often in his walks ſeen ſomething like muſhrooms, he makes it his buſineſs to look for ſome: Thus he picked up a few, of which Beaufidelle (who followed him up and down) having taken notice, immediately ranges about; and being nimbler-footed than his maſter, and not obliged to ſtoop ſo low, picked dou-

ble the quantity in the ſame ſpace of time; ſo that he ſoon had enough to ſerve him till the next ſeaſon.

His good ſucceſs in making that ſort of pickle, encourages him to try another; and, having taken notice of a plant in the wood that bears a ſmall green flower, which, before it is blown, looks like a caper, he gathers a few; and, their taſte and flavour being no way diſagreeable, judging that when pickled they would be pleaſant, he tries them, which, according to his mind, were full as good as the real ones, and gathers a ſufficient quantity, with the help of his attendant; ſtocking himſelf with two as pleaſant pickles as different ſorts: But there is another which he admires above all: None, to his mind, like the cucumber; and the iſland producing none, left him no room to hope for any; yet (as likeneſs is a vaſt help to imagination) if he could but find any thing, which ever ſo little reſembles them in make, nature, or taſte, it will pleaſe his fancy: He therefore examines every kind of buds, bloſſoms, and ſeeds; having at laſt found that of a wild parſnep, which being long and narrow, almoſt the bigneſs and make of a pickling cucumber, green and criſp withal, full of a ſmall flat ſeed, not unlike that of the thing he would fain have it to be, he pickles ſome of them; which being of a colour, and near upon the make, he fancies them quite of the taſte.

His beans being at that time large enough for the firſt crop, he gathers ſome for his dinner: The ſhells being tender and of a delicate green, it came into his mind, they might be made to imitate French beans: They are, ſaid he, near the nature, I can make them quite of the ſhape, ſo be they have the ſame ſavour. Accordingly, he cuts them in long narrow ſlips, and

pickles

pickles ſome; the other part he boils; and there being none to contradict their taſte, they paſſed current, for as good French beans as any that ever grew.

The diſappointment of having ſomething more comfortable than water to drink being retrieved by producing, in the room thereof, wherewithal to make his eatables more delicious, he proceeds in his firſt project; and, taking neceſſary care to prevent that accident which intercepted ſucceſs in his firſt undertaking, he accompliſhes his deſign, and makes a liquor nowiſe inferior to the beſt cyder: So that now he has both to revive and keep up his ſpirits, as well as to pleaſe his palate, and ſuit his appetite.

Having now nothing to crave or wiſh for, but rather all motives for content, he lies down with a peaceable mind, no care or fear diſturbing his thoughts; His ſleep is not interrupted with frightful fancies, but rather diverted with pleaſant and diverting dreams; he is not ſtartled at thunder or ſtorms, though ever ſo terrible, his truſt being on Providence, who at ſundry times, and in various manners has reſcued him from death, though apparently unavoidable; being for above thirty years miraculouſly protected and maintained in a place ſo remote from all human help and aſſiſtance.

Yet, notwithſtanding his firmneſs, and whole truſt on Providence, he is obliged to give way to the weakneſs of his nature; a ſtrange and ſhocking noiſe is heard at a diſtance in the air, which, having reached the place where he ſtood, covers it with darkneſs for ſeveral minutes; at which he is ſo alarmed, that he thinks himſelf paſt all hopes; till the noiſe being ceaſed, and that which intercepted the light diſperſed, his ſcared ſenſes returning to their proper ſeat, and

his ſtrayed reaſon recalled, he is aſhamed of the weakneſs of his faith, and begs pardon for his late miſtruſt of the continuation of Providence's protection, who had all along given him all imaginable reaſon to depend on it at all times: Thus, having opened his door, he ſteps out to ſee if he could diſcover the cauſe of the late moſt ſurprizing and ſudden darkneſs, in a bright ſun-ſhining day; which having found out by the vaſt number of dead birds of ſeveral kinds, lying up and down the ground, he was ſeized with no ſmall amazement, though with leſs fear.

From that moſt ſurprizing aſpect he infers, there had been a battle of theſe creatures in the air, the great number of which had occaſioned the late decreaſe.

Having made reflections upon that aſtoniſhing tranſaction, he can draw from thence no other inference, but a prognoſtication of dreadful wars in Europe, from which he begs heaven to protect his native country: And leſt the dead birds, that lay in great numbers, ſhould (with lying) infect the iſland, he and his monkey carried them to the other ſide of the rock, throwing them into the ſea; only as many of them as had ſoft feathers on their breaſt and bellies, he plucked away, to ſtuff a pillow for the beaſt, being a little too hot at nights for it to lie upon the bed. So having cleared the place, and being tired with often going up and down the rugged rock, he ſtayed at home the remainder of the day, and at night goes to bed; but, as the late omen of approaching evil had pre-occupied his thoughts in the day with cares concerning his country, his mind ran upon it in the night; dreaming he ſees wives weeping, and melting into tears, taking their leaves of their indulgent huſbands, hanging, deſtitute of ſtrenght, about their necks, whoſe

grief

grief weighed them to the ground. Turning from that afflicting object, he ſees another as ſhocking; the old father, bathed in tears, embracing his only ſon, bidding him farewel, and, with him, all the comforts of this life, and ſupport of his age. Moving his his eyes from that, they light on full as bad a ſight; the tender mother ſwooning in her dear child's arms, whom an inexorable preſs-gang is haling away. Thus every face expreſſing grief for a relation, or a friend, not being able any longer to behold thoſe terrifying objects, with which the town abounded, he betakes himſelf to the country; that by keeping from the afflicted, he may avoid grief.

Having quitted the town, he finds himſelf, on a ſudden, in a place as full of terrors, where he ſaw ſtreams of reeking blood here and there; looſe horſes kicking and prancing about; ſome dragging their late riders by the ſtirrups; others wounded, and their guts hanging about; at a diſtance, crowds of men in flame and ſmoke, confuſedly moving like heaps of duſt in a whirlwind, leaving behind them, as they moved, vaſt numbers of men and horſes, both dead and dying; ſome without legs, others without arms, and abundance with but one of each.

At a diſtance from thence, ſome in purſuit of their enemies, hacking and cutting them down all the way before them like wood for fuel; others flying from being ſlain, caſt themſelves into rapid rivers, where they periſh by thouſands.

As he was looking at thoſe terrible objects he finds himſelf on a ſudden ſurrounded by ruſtical ſoldiers, holding their ſwords and bayonets to his breaſt, and aſking him, in a furly manner, whether High or Low? at which being very much ſtartled, not knowing what to anſwer, nor, indeed, what they meant, he told them,

he was an Engliſhman; which they appearing to be alſo, made him hope for better uſage: But they ſeizing him in a violent manner, ſaid he might be Engliſh, and yet an enemy to the country. Then he awaked, in a wonderful fright; but, being come to himſelf, he concludes, that his dream proceeded from his late ſurprize at the preceding day's aſtoniſhing tranſactions: Therefore, having again recommended his country to heaven's protection, he goes about making the bed for his monkey, as he had concluded on before, and with ſome ſail-cloth makes a caſe, ſtuffing it with the feathers he had ſaved for that purpoſe.

The night being come, he lays the couching, which he made for the beaſt, by his own bed; which very readily went to it, being very ſoft and eaſy.

And, as cares for his country had in the day occupied his thoughts, his mind in the night is impreſſed with the ſubject, though not with ſo diſmal an idea as the preceding; having ſince been diverted with ſuch objects as removed the terrifying aſpects, which before offered themſelves to his imagination; which now is taken up with being in St. James's Park, where he had formerly taken pleaſure, and which he fancies had ſince loſt many of its former agreeableneſſes.

As he was walking, a report was raiſed, that a certain great perſon (who, by his late great ſervices to the nation, had gained a title to the palace) was juſt deceaſed; having before his death, intailed the ſame upon a foreign prince of great renown: This ſurprizing piece of news occaſioned a ſudden alteration in every body's countenance: Some looked pale with grief, others red with wrath; but every thing in nature

nature ſeemed to expreſs a feeling for the loſs; the trees ſhed half their virtues, and the graſs withered.

This dull ſcene having laſted ſome ſmall time, the trees and graſs recover their former verdure, brighter than before; the loſty oaks, which he fancied bordered the Mall, bore fine roſes in vaſt number.

This additional beauty in thoſe noble plants, already ſo famed abroad for their toughneſs and ſtrength, prompts people of all nations to come and refreſh themſelves under their loſty and fragrant ſhades.

Having with great ſatisfaction admired the ſurprizing improvement of the oaks, which, to his imagination, prognoſticated proſperity to the nation, he walks on northward, where he ſaw abundance of thiſtles, which made him wonder they were permitted to grow in a place where every thing ought to contribute to its agreeableneſs and pleaſantneſs; but, having conſidered the ſtoutneſs of the plants, which denoted their being well-rooted, he judged it impoſſible to clear the ground: Beſides the bees loving to ſettle on them, and probably ſucking more honey from their bloſſoms than any more agreeable or ſweet-ſcented flower; for that reaſon, he imagined they were not gathered.

Walking back again, he meets with ſeveral noblemen, ſome with a blue cordoon, others with green, each with a gardening-tool in his hand, going to turn up and till the ground, between that where the thiſtles grew, and that where the oaks ſtood: He was ſtartled to ſee thoſe great perſons, who hardly will concern themſelves with their own lands and poſſeſſions, labour to improve that wherein every private perſon had a ſhare. He ſtood ſome time admiring their dexterity, and readineſs at their work; then walks on to the Mall, which he found thronged with a multi-

tude

tude of people of all nations, every one having a roſe in his hand, wherewith they diverted themſelves as they walked.

Having gazed about him a conſiderable time, he had a fancy to go and ſee how the noble gardeners went on with their work; where, being come, he finds, to his great admiration, the ground had been ſo wonderfully well manured, that the oaks and thiſtles had ſtruck their roots through it, and met; ſo, growing together, had produced a plant which bore both roſes and thiſtles, to every-body's wonder; which made the thiſtles ſo valued ever ſince, that there are but few great or fine gardens, which have not more or leſs of them.

His monkey, being ſtartled out of his ſleep in a mighty fright, ran behind his back ſqueaking, and awaked him in the midſt of his amazement; being exceedingly pleaſed with his late dream, of which he conceived a mighty good omen to old England, differing ſo very much from the preceding, both in nature and ſignification.

Thus, tho' earlier than he uſually roſe, he gets up to ſet it down, whilſt freſh in his mind, and alſo the year, being 1707. then takes a walk before breakfaſt, and the beaſt with him; which, being not yet recovered of its late fright, keeps cloſe to his maſter, every now and-then looking behind, as tho' ſtill afraid; at which Quarll concludes the creature muſt needs have been diſturbed in its ſleep, the night before, with ſome frightful dream; which made him wonder, that an animal void of reaſon, and incapable of reflection, ſhould be ſuſceptible of imagination.

The day being paſſed without any extraordinary occurrence, he made no further remark, but followed his uſual occupation, and then went to his reſt, and the

the monkey to his new bed, as the night before, which he took care to draw as cloſe to his maſter as he could, then, having been twice or thrice about the room, examining every corner, he lies down, and ſleeps quietly till the dawning of the morning; at which time he ſtarts up again, as the night before.

Quarll, being a ſecond time awaked in the ſame manner, and much about the ſame hour, concludes the cauſe muſt proceed from the pillow, and reſolves to experiment himſelf the next night; at which time crowds of terrifying aſpects appear in his imagination, which allure his whole faculties, and ſet all his ſenſes in an uproar; his eyes are taken up with frightful objects, and his ear filled with a terrible noiſe; at which the reſt of his ſenſes have loſt their offices, and are become uſeleſs.

Being awake the next morning, he finds himſelf incline to believe, that the pillow had really ſome influence on his imagination; but as one night's experience was not a ſufficient ſolution to his enquiry in that ſupernatural operation, having often dreamed before he uſed the pillow; he reſolves to try it ſeveral nights ſucceſſively; during which his monkey ſlept very quiet, and he as diſturbed. This works a great way towards the perſuaſion of what he had a ſtrong fancy to believe: Yet, to be better ſatisfied of the reality of it, he lays by the pillow for three or four nights together; during which time, both he and the beaſt ſlept very quiet.

This added much to his opinion, that evil efflavia iſſued out of thoſe feathers the pillow was ſtuffed with; but as he formerly dreamed, and had many nights intermiſſion between thoſe that were entertained with dreams, he will once more try it, before he concludes that it is ſo; thus puts it again under his head

head that night: And, as it was the laſt experiment, it proved alſo the moſt troubleſome, he being at that time terrified with more ſhocking objects than the preceding; which, tho' they repreſent fierce and bloody battles to his imagination, yet were leſs terrible to him; having not, as yet, diſcerned his native country engaged therein, whom now he finds to be the principal party concerned, on which all ſucceſs depends, and which cannot be ſtrove for without paſt expences, and irretriveable loſs of his dear countrymen; for which his heart bled as plentifully as for thoſe whom he dreamed he ſaw in their gore.

Having with terror and grief fatigued his eyes with the moſt ſhocking and afflicting effects of war, men and horſes lying as thick upon the ground as graſs in a meadow, and ſtreams of blood running like ſo many brooks, ſupplied by a ſtrong ſpring; he lifts up his eyes to heaven, imploring an end to that execrable devourer of mankind.

And whilſt his eyes were ſtill fixed to the heavens, he ſees victory ruſhing thro' thick clouds of obſtacles approaching to her; which having overcome, ſhe ſettled over the army his countrymen belonged to, over whoſe head ſhe ſhook and flouriſhed her colours. pointing at approaching peace, attended with plenty; but on a ſudden there aroſe an infectious miſt out of the ground, which cramped the Engliſhmen's hands, that they could no more uſe their conquering arms, this fatal accident having both encouraged and ſtrengthened the enemy, they fell on the unfortunate remains of the army, with unmerciful fury; who, now having loſt all their ſupport and dependence, were moſt cruelly cut to pieces; at which moſt diſmal and afflicting object, he awaked: And tho' this dream was a ſufficient proof of the feathers influence,

yet

yet he cannot be ſatisfied but it muſt be ominous, having ſo much relation to the preceding; therefore ſets it down with them; and, for a more certain conviction of what he had all cauſe imaginable to believe, he is reſolved to try his monkey once more the night following: But the beaſt, who had not yet forgot the uneaſineſs that the bed had cauſed him, choſe to lie on the ground: which intirely convinced Quarll, that there was a malignant quality in thoſe feathers: Wherefore he throws them into the ſea, and fills the caſe with a ſort of ſoft moſs, which grew at the bottom of a particular tree, on which the creature lay very quiet ever after.

And as yearly ſtripping the eagles of their eggs, had prevented their increaſe, it alſo favoured and advanced that of the creatures in the iſland, on whoſe young they fed; ſo that the number of the wild monkeys being conſiderably augmented, made their food ſcant, which cauſed them now-and-then to come and ſteal ſomewhat out of Quarll's ground. Beaufidelle, whoſe good keeping and warm lying had made him thrive in bigneſs and ſtrength exceeding his kind, finding ſome of them ſtealing his maſter's roots, beat them away; which obliged thoſe ſubtle creatures to come ſeveral together, the better to be able to encounter him; which Quarll having taken notice of, and being willing to add a new ſport to his uſual diverſions, cuts a ſtick of the length and bigneſs that the creature could manage, which he gave him: and, taking his own ſtaff, exerciſes it before him, which did the ſame with his; and, apprehending what uſe it was given him for, he had it often in his hands, and with it drove away the others, when they came, tho' ten or a dozen together; ſo that the roots were very well guarded, by his continual watching; which made thoſe fly

and

and ſpiteful creatures watch an opportunity to take him at a diſadvantage: Thus finding him one morning, as he was going for water by himſelf, as he was wont to do, and being then without his ſtaff, of which they ſtood in great fear, a conſiderable number fell upon him, and ſo bit and beat him, that he lay as dead; but his maſter appearing, who, being uneaſy at his extraordinary ſtay, was gone to ſee what was the occaſion thereof, put them to the flight; and they left the poor creature with juſt breath enough to keep its life in, and ſcarce ſtrength ſufficient to draw it.

Quarll, being come to the place where his beloved Beauſidelle lay in a moſt diſmal bloody condition, could not forbear ſhedding tears to ſee him thus miſerably dying: but, finding ſtill breath in him; it gave him hopes of his recovery: And taking him up in his arms, with all the care he could, he haſtens home, and gives him a little of the liquor he had made, which by that time had got both body and ſpirit; then having laid him upon its bed, and covered him with his winter wrapper, he makes a fire and warms ſome of the ſaid liquor, and freſh butter, wherewith he waſhes its ſores; ſo lays him down again, giving him all the careful attendance he could, during his illneſs, which held but one week; at the end of which he died, to his unſpeakable grief, who, from that time grew ſo melancholy, that he had not the courage to go on with his memorial; till having a moſt remarkable dream about twelve months after, he changed his reſolution, and proceeded in his memoirs: And as he ſet down his dream, he alſo did the death of his beloved beaſt, it happening near the ſame time.

Having ſpent the year but dully, for want of his diverting

diverting company at home; to put this as much out of his mind as he could, he walked the ſpare hours he had left from his uſual occupation, Thus being one day ſomewhat fatigued, having loſt his wonted alacrity, he ſat down under the next cluſter of trees he came at; and, being in a dull diſpoſition, was ſoon lulled aſleep, at a loneſome note of a certain ſort of melancholy bird, which ſhuns others company (tho' of its own kind) at all times but in breeding-time; which, having placed itſelf in the thickeſt and ſhadieſt part of the grove, where Quarll had made choice to lie, falls a ſinging his melancholy notes; which being ſuitable to his diſpoſition of both body and mind, ſoon lulled him aſleep; during which he dreamed, that he ſaw an old man ſitting in a large circle, around which all the ſigns of the Zodiac were, and the old gentleman appeared extreme buſy, ſtringing of ſmall beads, ſome white, and ſome black; and, when he had ſtrung a certain number, he began another ſtring, and ſo on. He had the curioſity to tell how many he put in a ſtring, ſo keeps an account of the next he did begin, and tells juſt 60: Having made as many of theſe ſtrings as there were beads in each, he puts them together, and begins again to ſtring, mixing white and black as they came to his hand, twiſting every ſixtieth ſtring in parcels, till he had made ſixty of them, which he neatly plaits together, proceeding as from the beginning, and makes 24 of thoſe plaits, which he weaves together, making a flat piece of bead-work, changeable upon black, which, when looked upon one way, ſeemed pleaſant, and, being ſeen from another, as diſagreeable. He worked on till he had made three hundred and ſixty-four ſuch pieces, then lays them up in a bundle, and goes to work again, beginning to ſtring as at firſt.

Having

Having looked himſelf weary with ſeeing ſtill the ſame, of which he could make nothing, he goes away leaving the old gentleman ſtringing his beads, who, ſeeing him go, lays by his work, and follows him; and having overtaken him, aſked him, what he had been looking at all that time? He, being ſurpriſed at the ſurly queſtion, modeſtly replies, he had been admiring his work; in doing which, he hoped there was no offence. No, ſaid the old man, provided thou learneſt ſomething by what thou haſt ſeen. To which he anſwered, it was impoſſible for him to learn ſuch a myſterious buſineſs, with once ſeeing it done; ſo much leſs, being entirely a ſtranger to it. A ſtranger to it art thou? replied the old man in a ſurly manner; and haſt waſted ſo much of my work! I am Time, whom thou haſt often ill-uſed; and thoſe white and black beads, that thou haſt ſeen me ſtring, are good and bad moments, I croud into minutes, which I link into hours; thus weave days, wherewith years are compoſed. Thou haſt ſeen me complete the preſent, which is reckoned the year 1713, I tell thee, before the enſuing is ended, I will grace the Britiſh throne with an illuſtrious race to the end of kings reigns; ſo vaniſhed. Then he awaked in a great ſurpriſe, and goes home, pondering on his dream; of which he inferred, that if there be any ſignification in the roving conceptions of the mind, this muſt prognoſticate the ſpeedy acceſſion of ſome great monarch upon the Engliſh throne: So ſets down in his memorial that moſt remarkable dream, which happened in 1713 heartily wiſhing the accompliſhment thereof, for the quiet and proſperity of his dear country.

There happened nothing after, for the ſpace of four years, but great thunders and lightnings in the ſummer,

ſummer, and abundance of hail and ſnow in the winter, with now-and-then ſtorms, which left ſeveral ſorts of fiſhes in the cliſts and holes of the rocks, and ſometimes fragments of ſtaved ſhips, and battered caſks, or broken cheſts, with a plank, and ſuch-like products of ſhipwreck, not worth recording: By which means, for want of employment he has ſeveral idle and ſullen hours in the day-time, which his late beloved animal's diverting company made ſlip away with pleaſure, and for want of which they now creep ſlowly on; being loaded with dull and heavy thoughts, which made thoſe walks irkſome, he at that time took for eaſe; that by the diverſity of objects abroad, his mind might be withdrawn from his anxious ſolitude.

Having one day peruſed his memorial, as he commonly did once a year, the dream he had in 1713. wherein Time predicted ſuch great happineſs to his country the year enſuing, made ſuch an impreſſion in his mind, that he always thought of it. Accordingly, being walking, and the day proving extraordinary hot, he goes to ſhelter himſelf in one of his natural groves; where, having laid himſelf down on the graſs, he was ſoon lulled aſleep; during which, the idea he had conceived of his former dream, repreſented to his imagination a moſt majeſtic and graceful monarch, ſitting on a magnificent throne, round which ſtood many delightful olive plants, which much added to his luſtre.

Having, with a great deal of pleaſure, gazed at the moſt graceful countenance of the king, which denoted juſtice, equity, love, and clemency; he gave heaven thanks for the mighty bleſſing beſtowed on his conntry, coming away, in order to return to his iſland, with

with this additional happineſs to the many he already enjoyed.

Being come from court, on his journey he meets the ſame old gentleman of whom he dreamed the year before; who, taking him by the hand, ſaid, I find thou haſt been to ſee the accompliſhment of my prediction: Now I'll tell the more.

Ere one thouſand ſeven hundred and ſixty is written,
All diviſions, remember, will ceaſe in Great Britain.

Next, I will ſhew thee what I have done to ſecure the accompliſhment of my prophecy: Then takes him to a high place, from whence he could ſee into the cabinets of all the princes in Europe; in ſeveral of which, he took notice, lay a vaſt heap of rich and coſtly things, but confuſed, ſhapeleſs, and fit for no uſe: Now, ſaid the old man to him, theſe are diſappointnents; and defeated projects, made to intercept what I determined; then vaniſhes: At which he awaked, exceeding glad to find himſelf ſafe in his bleſſed iſland, aud wonderful pleaſed with his dream, which betokened ſo much good to his dear country. This was the concluſion of his records in 1724.

ED. DORRINGTON.

BRITISH MUSEUM 6 NO 73

FINIS.